



This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

### Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

- + *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.
- + *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.
- + *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.
- + *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

### About Google Book Search

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at <http://books.google.com/>

Educ  
1918.97  
435

# ITALIAN GRAMMAR

---

ALFRED GRAMSCI

W. H. Freeman & Co.

Edue T 1918.97.435

**Harvard College  
Library**



**By Exchange**

A. E. Seelye  
Sage.

---



3 2044 102 868 882



Heath's Modern Language Series.

# ITALIAN GRAMMAR.

BY

C. H. GRANDGENT,

DIRECTOR OF MODERN LANGUAGE INSTRUCTION IN THE BOSTON  
PUBLIC SCHOOLS, FORMERLY TUTOR IN MODERN  
LANGUAGES IN HARVARD UNIVERSITY.

---

*Third Edition, Revised and Enlarged.*

---

BOSTON, U.S.A.:

D. C. HEATH & CO., PUBLISHERS.

1897.

EducT 1918.97.435

HARVARD COLLEGE LIBRARY  
BY EXCHANGE FROM  
NEW YORK STATE LIBRARY  
FEB 27 1932

*Copyright, 1887,*

**By C. H. GRANDGENT.**

---

ELECTROTYPED BY J. S. CUSHING & Co., BOSTON.

## PREFACE.

---

THIS volume is the result of an attempt to put into convenient form and the smallest possible compass all the grammar that the ordinary student of Italian will need. Short as the book is, it contains some paragraphs which beginners will probably skip: the longer lists of words and endings, and a great part of the chapters on suffixes and irregular verbs will be useful mainly for reference. The vocabularies cover the twenty-one exercises; they are not intended to include words explained in the notes, nor proper names that are exactly the same in Italian and in English.

I have endeavored to make the book represent the Italian language as it is spoken and written at the present day; the exercises are taken chiefly from reading-books lately prepared for Tuscan schools. Still, I have tried to give also as many obsolete forms as students of the Italian classics will require.

It has been my aim throughout to make the rules clear for all classes of pupils, even for those ignorant of other foreign languages, provided they understand the technical words commonly used in grammars. With this object in view, I have ascribed to the Italian vowels the pronunciation of the English ones that are most like them: an accurate description of the Italian sounds would, I fear, prove confusing to beginners who have had no training in phonetics. It will be easy for the instructor to explain not only



the vowels, but some of the consonants, and the division of words into syllables, much better than can be done in a book like this.

The authorities I have consulted most are the dictionaries of Fanfani, Rigutini and Fanfani, Fornari (*Nuovo Bazzarini*), and Tommaseo and Bellini. I have made but little use of other grammars; I am, however, indebted to Toscani for some ideas and a few of my examples. The chapters on syntax, and the treatment of irregular verbs, pronouns, suffixes, and the plural of words in *-co* and *-go* are almost entirely the result of original work.

In conclusion, I wish to express my gratitude to Professor Nash, of Harvard, to my friend and teacher, Sig. Filippo Orlando, of Florence, and to the gentlemen who assisted me in correcting the proof-sheets; and I wish above all to thank Professor Sheldon, of Harvard, and Professor Bendelari, of Yale, without whose aid and encouragement I should scarcely have ventured to offer this book to the public.

CAMBRIDGE, September, 1887.

# TABLE OF CONTENTS.

	PAGE
PRONUNCIATION .....	1-7
ARTICLES .....	7-11
The Definite Article .....	7-10
The Indefinite Article .....	10
<i>Exercises 1, 2</i> .....	11
NOUNS .....	11-17
Gender .....	12-13
Number .....	13-16
<i>Exercises 3, 4</i> .....	16-17
ADJECTIVES .....	18-23
Gender and Number .....	18-20
Comparison.....	20-22
<i>Exercises 5, 6</i> .....	22-23
AUGMENTATIVES AND DIMINUTIVES ; NUMERALS .....	23-29
Augmentative and Diminutive Endings .....	23-25
Numerals.....	25-28
<i>Exercises 7, 8</i> .....	28-29
• DEMONSTRATIVE, INTERROGATIVE, RELATIVE, AND POSSESSIVE PRO-	
NOUNS .....	30-35
Demonstrative Pronouns.....	30-31
Interrogative Pronouns .....	31
Relative Pronouns .....	31-33
Possessive Pronouns .....	33-34
<i>Exercises 9, 10</i> .....	35
PERSONAL PRONOUNS .....	36-46
Conjunctive Forms.....	36-40

	PAGE
Disjunctive Forms .....	40-42
Forms of Address .....	43-44
<i>Exercises 11, 12.</i> .....	44-46
AUXILIARY VERBS .....	47-55
Auxiliaries of Voice and Tense .....	47-53
<b>Essere</b> .....	47
<b>Avere</b> .....	48
Modal Auxiliaries .....	53-54
<i>Exercises 13, 14.</i> .....	54-55
REGULAR AND IRREGULAR VERBS .....	55-65
The Regular Verb .....	56-59
First Conjugation .....	56-57
Second and Third Conjugations .....	57-58
Fourth Conjugation .....	58-59
The Irregular Verb .....	60-63
<b>Porre</b> .....	60-61
<i>Exercises 15, 16.</i> .....	63-65
MOODS AND TENSES .....	65-74
Infinitive and Participle .....	65-68
Past, Present, and Future .....	68-69
Conditional .....	69
Subjunctive .....	69-72
<i>Exercises 17, 18.</i> .....	72-74
CONJUNCTIONS, PREPOSITIONS, AND ADVERBS .....	74-84
Conjunctions .....	74-76
Prepositions .....	76-80
Adverbs .....	80-82
<i>Exercises 19, 20</i> .....	83-84
INDEFINITE PRONOUNS .....	84-87
<i>Exercise 21.</i> .....	87
LIST OF IRREGULAR VERBS ARRANGED ACCORDING TO CONJUGATION .....	88-100
First Conjugation .....	89-90
Second Conjugation .....	90-93

# CONTENTS.

vii

	PAGE
Third Conjugation.....	93-98
Present Regular.....	93-96
Present Irregular.....	96-98
Fourth Conjugation.....	99-100
Present Regular.....	99
Present Irregular.....	99-100
ALPHABETICAL LIST OF IRREGULAR AND DEFECTIVE VERBS.....	101-105
ITALIAN-ENGLISH VOCABULARY.....	107-114
ENGLISH-ITALIAN VOCABULARY.....	115-121
APPENDIX.....	123-127
Additional Notes on Pronunciation.....	123-125
Inflections of the Voice.....	126-127
INDEX.....	129-132



# ITALIAN GRAMMAR.

---

## PRONUNCIATION.

1. The Italian alphabet has the same letters as the English, except that *k*, *w*, *x*, and *y* do not occur in modern Italian.

2. The Italians distinguish seven vowels: *a*, close *e*, open *e*, *i*, close *o*, open *o*, *u*; each of which always has the same sound, no matter what may be its position in the word, and never tends, as do the English long vowels, to become a diphthong. Italian vowels are all pronounced very quickly; hence there is but little difference in quantity between accented and unaccented sounds. English-speaking students must carefully avoid drawling the accented and slighting the unaccented syllables; they should try to give to every Italian vowel about the length of *i* in "bitter."

▲ is nearly like *a* in "father": as *fava*, *canna*, *cassa*, *palla*.

E, close, is nearly like *a* in "fate": as *beve*, *vere*, *stelle*, *messe*.

E, open, may be formed by trying to pronounce *e* in "bell" with the mouth very wide open: as *bella*, *amena*, *fera*, *pensa*.

**I** is nearly like *ee* in "feet": as *miri, vini, fissi, spilli*.

**O**, close, is nearly like *o* in "mope": as *dopo, dove, bollo, sotto*.

**O**, open, is nearly like *aw* in "saw" pronounced with the mouth wide open: as *no, odi, poi, donna*.

**U** is nearly like *oo* in "boot": as *una, cura, nulla, ruppi*.

*a.* The letters *i* and *u* are sometimes used to represent consonant sounds (see 4); but in formulating rules they are always counted as vowels.

**3.** As close and open vowels are not distinguished in spelling, some rules are necessary:—

(1) Unaccented *e* and *o* are always close: as *mare*, "sea"; *amo*, "I love."

(2) *E* and *o* are close in all monosyllables\* ending in a consonant: as *con*, "with"; *non*, "not"; *per*, "for."

(3) In monosyllables\* and oxytones† ending in a vowel, final *e* is close, final *o* is open: as *che*, "what"; *me*, "me"; *re*, "king"; *credè*, "he believed"; *perchè*, "why"; *do*, "I give"; *Po*, "Po"; *sarò*, "I shall be"; *andò*, "he went." Exceptions: final *e* is open in *è* = "is," *re* = "re," interjections (as *aimè*, "alas"; *chè*, "nonsense"), proper names (as *Noè*, "Noah"), and foreign words (as *caffè*, "coffee"); final *o* is close in *lo* and *o*.

(4) Accented *e* and *o* are always open in the groups *ie* and *uo*: as *piede*, "foot"; *fuoco*, "fire." *E* and *o* standing for *ie* and *uo* are open: as *ven* = *viene*, "he comes"; *cor* = *cuore*, "heart."

\* Not including shortened forms of words that regularly have more than one syllable.

† Words accented on the last syllable.

(5) In words that have always formed a part of the spoken language, accented *e* is nearly always close when it represents Latin *ē* or *ĕ*, open when it represents Latin *ē* or *æ*; accented *o* is nearly always close when it represents Latin *ō* or *ū*, open when it represents Latin *ō* or *au*. In book words accented *e* and *o* are usually open.

In all cases not covered by the first three rules, the quality of *e* and *o* will be marked in this book, an acute accent (´) denoting the close, a circumflex (^) the open sound: as *avére*, "to have"; *méno*, "less"; *tiéne*, "he holds"; *liétto*, "happy"; *poétta*, "poet"; *óra*, "hour"; *mólto*, "much"; *buóno*, "good"; *pòco*, "little"; *mòto*, "motion."

4. **B, f, m, p, q, v** are pronounced as in English.

**C** before *e* or *i* sounds like *ch* in "chin"; elsewhere it is always like English *k*: as *cima*, "top"; *cóme*, "how"; *dólce*, "sweet." **G** before *e* or *i* sounds like *g* in "gem"; elsewhere it is always like *g* in "go": as *gatto*, "cat"; *gènte*, "people"; *spingi*, "push."

*a.* A *cc* or a *gg* before *e* or *i* has merely the sound of *ch* in "chin" or *g* in "gem" prolonged: as *facce*, "faces"; *légge*, "law."

**D, l, n, t** are pronounced further forward in the mouth than in English; the tip of the tongue should touch the back of the upper front teeth: as *alto*, "high"; *dato*, "given"; *luna*, "moon"; *nudo*, "naked"; *tuòno*, "thunder."

**H** is always silent: as *ahi*, "oh!" *ha*, "he has."

**I**, unaccented, before a vowel, sounds like English *y*: as *iéri*, "yesterday"; *paio*, "pair"; *più*, "more." In the groups *cia*, *cio*, *ciu*, *gia*, *gio*, *giu*, an unaccented *i* serves only to show that the *c* or *g* is soft: as *faccia*,



"face"; *guancia*, "cheek"; *ciò*, "that"; *giù*, "down"; *mangia*, "eat"; *raggio*, "ray."

**J** is merely another way of writing *i*.

**N** before a *q* or a hard *c* or *g* has the sound of English *ng*: as *banca* (*bang-ka*), "bank"; *dunque* (*dung-kwe*), "therefore"; *lungo* (*lung-go*), "long."

**R** is always rolled, the point of the tongue vibrating against the teeth: as *caro*, "dear"; *rosso*, "red"; *per*, "for." When *r* is double or followed by a consonant, the trill is prolonged: as *carro*, "cart"; *burro*, "butter"; *marrone*, "chestnut"; *carne*, "meat"; *porta*, "door."

**S** is generally pronounced nearly like English *s* in "see," but with a somewhat sharper sound: as *sò*, "I know"; *spillo*, "pin."

Initial *s* before a sonant (*b, d, g, l, m, n, r, v*) has a sound intermediate between *s* and English *z*: as *sdrucchiolare*, "to slip"; *slitta*, "sleigh."

A single *s* between vowels has, in most words, the sound of English *z*: as *caso*, "case"; *causa*, "cause"; *viso*, "face." But in the following cases it is pronounced like *s* in "see," "mason": —

*a.* In *ásino, casa, Chiusi, còsa, così, desidèrio, naso, parasito, péso, Pisa, pisello, pòsa, ripòso, riso, susina*, and their derivatives, and in many uncommon words.

*b.* After the prefixes *de-, di-,\* pre-, pro-, re-, ri-, tra-\**: as *desistere, disègno, presumere, proseguire, riservare, risolvete, trasudare*.

*c.* In the adjective ending *-oso* and the adjective and substantive ending *-ese*: as *noioso*, "troublesome"; *inglese*, "English"; *mese*, "month." But in *cortése, francése, lucchèse, marchése, paése, palése*, the *s* is like English *z*.

---

\* Not to be confounded with *dis-, tras-*: *disonóre, trasandare*.

*d.* In the preterites and past participles of *chiedere*, *chiudere*, *nascondere*, *pörre*, *rädere*, *ridere*, *rimanere*, *rispondere*, *rödere*, and all verbs in *-endere*; and in their compounds and derivatives: as *chièsi*, *socchiuso*, *nascóse*, *rispósero*, *rasóio*, *rimase*, *corrispósi*, *rósero*, *accési*, *réso*, *scésa*. Exceptions to this rule are *deridere*, verbs in *-clüdere*, and derivatives of *rödere*.

**U**, unaccented, before a vowel, sounds like English *w*: as *buòno*, "good"; *guardare*, "to look"; *può*, "he can."

**Z** and **zz** are generally pronounced like a long and vigorous *ts*: as *alzare*, "to lift"; *azióne*, "action"; *prézzo*, "price"; *zío*, "uncle."

In the following cases, however, *z* and *zz* sound like a prolonged *dz*:—

*a.* In *azzurro*, *dozzina*, *mézzo*, *pranzo*, *ribrézzo*, *romanzo*, *zèlo*, and many less common words.

*b.* In verbs in *-izzare* (as *utilizzare*, "to utilize"); except *attizzare*, *dirizzare*, *guizzare*, *rizzare*, *stizzare*, and their compounds, and a few uncommon words.

**5.** The following combinations are to be noted:—

**Ch** (used only before *e* and *i*) is always like English *k*: as *fichi* (plural of *fico*, "fig"). **Sch** is like *sk*: as *schérzo*, "sport."

**Gh** (used only before *e* and *i*) is always like English *g* in "go": as *aghi* (plural of *ago*, "needle").

**Gl** (written **gl** if the following vowel be *i*) is nearly like English *lli* in "million": as *figlio*, "son"; *figli*, "sons." But in *Ánglia*, *geroglífico*, *glicerina*, *negligere* and its derivatives, and a few uncommon words borrowed from the Greek or Latin, *gl* is like English *gl*.

**Gn** is nearly like *ni* in "onion": as *ógni*, "every."

**Qu** is always like *kw*: as *quésto*, "this."

**Sc** before *e* and *i* is nearly like *sh* in "ship": as *uscire*, "to go out." Before all other letters it is pronounced *sk*: as *scuôla*, "school"; *schérno*, "contempt."

**6.** Every letter in Italian is distinctly and separately sounded; the only exceptions are *h*, silent *i* (see **4**), and the combinations mentioned in **5**. Ex.: *arte*, "art"; *firma*, "signature"; *furto*, "theft"; *giórno*, "day"; *vêrso*, "toward"; *anddi*, "I went"; *dura*, "breeze"; *bugie*, "lies"; *Eurôpa*, "Europe"; *miêi*, "my"; *paúra*, "fear"; *sentti*, "I felt"; *suôî*, "his."

Where a double consonant is written, both letters must be sounded, the first at the end of the preceding, the second at the beginning of the following syllable: as *anno*, "year"; *babbo*, "father"; *fatto*, "done"; *mêssô*, "put"; *quêllo*, "that." For *rr*, *zz*, and soft *cc* and *gg*, see **4**.

*L*, *m*, *n*, and *r*, when preceded by an accented vowel and followed by another consonant, are prolonged: as *alto* (*all-to*), "high"; *sempre* (*sêmm-pre*), "always"; *tanto* (*tann-to*), "so much"; *parte* (*parr-te*), "part."

**7.** The accent is nearly always the same as in Latin. In this book it will always be noted. Of the signs written here, students are to use only the grave (`), which is placed on the last syllable of oxytones and on some monosyllables; Italian writers do not agree as to the use of the other marks.

**8.** Italian words are divided in such a way that, if possible, every syllable shall begin with a consonant: as *ta-vo-lî-no*, "table"; *frat-tân-to*, "meanwhile"; *al-l' uô-mo*, "to the man"; *nar-râ-re*, "to relate"; *mêz-zo*, "half"; *câc-cia*, "hunt"; *ô-g-gi*, "to-day."

In the groups *s* + consonant, consonant + *r*, those mentioned in 5, and *cl*, *fl*, *gl*, *pl*, both consonants belong to the following syllable. *I = y* and *u = w* go with the following vowel; *di*, *du*, *ei*, *eu*, *oi* are not separated. Ex.: *al-l' du-ra*, *a-vrò*, *bi-sò-gno*, *ca-stì-ghi*, *del-l' ac-qua*, *in-chiò-stro*, *mièti*, *mi-gliò-re*, *ri-flèt-te-re*, *te-d-tro*, *tuòti*.

## ARTICLES.

9. The article is not declined, but it agrees with its substantive in gender and number.

## THE DEFINITE ARTICLE

## 10. Masculine :—

a. Sing. *il*, pl. *i*, before a word beginning with any consonant except *s* impure\* and *z*.

b. Sing. *lo*, pl. *gli*, before a vowel or *s* impure or *z*.†

Before a vowel *lo* becomes *l'*; *gli* becomes *gl'* before *i*.

Ex.: *Il pàdre*, the father; *i pàdri*, the fathers.

*Lo stèsso pàdre*, the same father.

*Lo sciàme*, the swarm; *gli sciàmi*, the swarms.

*Lo zio*, the uncle; *gli zii*, the uncles.

*L' uòmo*, the man; *gl' insètti*, the insects.

## 11. Feminine :—

Sing. *la*, pl. *le*.

Before a vowel *la* becomes *l'*; *le* becomes *l'* before *e*.

Ex.: *La mādre*, the mother; *le mādri*, the mothers.

*L' ora*, the hour; *le ore*, the hours; *l' erbe*, the herbs.

\* That is, *s* followed by another consonant.

† *Li* is sometimes used for *gli*. Some writers use *il*, *i* before *s* and before *sce-* or *sci-*.

12. When the definite article is preceded by one of the prepositions *di*, *da*, *a*, *in*, *con*, *su*, *per*, the article and preposition are generally contracted into one word, as shown in the following table (*con*, *per* are often uncontracted) :—

	IL	I	LO	GLI	LA	LE	L'
<i>Di</i> , of	<i>del</i>	<i>dèi</i> or <i>de'</i>	<i>dèllo</i>	<i>dègli</i>	<i>dèlla</i>	<i>dèlle</i>	<i>dell'</i>
<i>Da</i> , by	<i>dai</i>	<i>dài</i> or <i>da'</i>	<i>dàllo</i>	<i>dàgli</i>	<i>dàlla</i>	<i>dàlle</i>	<i>dall'</i>
<i>A</i> , to	<i>al</i>	<i>di</i> or <i>a'</i>	<i>dillo</i>	<i>dgli</i>	<i>dlla</i>	<i>dlle</i>	<i>all'</i>
<i>In</i> , in	<i>nel</i>	<i>nèi</i> or <i>ne'</i>	<i>nèllo</i>	<i>nègli</i>	<i>nèlla</i>	<i>nèlle</i>	<i>nell'</i>
<i>Con</i> , with	<i>col</i>	<i>còi</i> or <i>co'</i>	<i>còllo</i>	<i>cògli</i>	<i>còlla</i>	<i>còlle</i>	<i>coll'</i>
<i>Su</i> , on	<i>sul</i>	<i>sùì</i> or <i>su'</i>	<i>sùllo</i>	<i>sùgli</i>	<i>sùlla</i>	<i>sùlle</i>	<i>sull'</i>
<i>Per</i> , for	<i>pel</i>	<i>pèi</i> or <i>pe'</i>	<i>per lo</i>	<i>per gli</i>	<i>per la</i>	<i>per le</i>	<i>per l'</i>

Ex. : *Del pàdre*, of the father ; *dài pàdri*, by the fathers.

*Àllo spècchio*, to the mirror ; *nègli spècchi*, in the mirrors.

*Còlla mādre*, with the mother ; *còlle mādri*, with the mothers.

*Sull' uòmo*, on the man ; *per gli uòmini*, for the men.

a. The word "some" is frequently rendered in Italian by *dì* with the definite article. This is called the partitive genitive.

Ex. : *Dàtemi del vīno*, give me some wine.

*Dèlle bèlle còse*, some fine things.

13. In the following cases the definite article is used in Italian, though not in English :—

a. Before the possessive pronouns : as *il nòstro giardino*, "our garden" ; *i suòi fratrèlli*, "his brothers." When, however, the possessive qualifies an otherwise unmodified noun in the singular expressing relationship, the article is generally omitted : as *la mīa mādre*, "my mother." For a fuller statement see 45, a.

b. Before an abstract noun or one denoting a whole class.

Ex.: *L' uomo propone*, man proposes.

*I fiori nascono dal seme*, flowers spring from the seed.

*Gli uccelli hanno le ali*, birds have wings.

*La morte è il peggiore dei mali*, death is the worst of evils.

c. In general before a noun used with any adjective that does not express quantity.

Ex.: *L' anno scorso*, last year; *gli uomini buoni*, good men.

*Il povero Luigi non viene*, poor Lewis doesn't come.

d. Before a title followed by a proper name: as *la regina Vittoria*, "Queen Victoria"; *il signor Bruni*, "Mr. Brown."

e. Before family names; often before given names of women; occasionally before given names of well-known men.

Ex.: *Il Bianchi è morto*, White is dead; *la Patti canta*, Patti sings.

*Conosco l'Olivia*, I know Olivia; *Dante* or *il Dante*, Dante.

f. Before names of countries and continents: as *la Svizzera*, "Switzerland"; *all' Italia*, "to Italy"; *per l' Europa*, "for Europe." But the article is omitted after *in* in phrases that denote going to or dwelling in a country, and often after *di* when *di* with the name of a country is equivalent to an adjective of nationality: as *vado in Germania*, "I go to Germany"; *rimango in Francia*, "I remain in France"; *la regina d' Inghilterra*, "the queen of England"; *il vino di Spagna*, "the wine of Spain."

In all the above cases (beginning with 13, a) the article, unless it would be employed in English, is omitted when the noun is used as a vocative or is modified by a numeral or a pronominal adjective.

Ex.: a. *Questa sua opera*, this work of his.

b. *Vi sono sette virtù*, there are seven virtues.

c. *Povero padre*, poor father!

d. *Signora Monti, come sta*, Mrs. Monti, how do you do?

e. *Quel Neri è malato*, that Black is ill.

f. *Italia, ti rivedo*, Italy, I see thee again.

- g. Vitni, amico mio, come, my friend.*  
*h. Ha parecchi visi, he has several bad habits.*  
*i. Due bellissimi cani, two very fine dogs.*

### THE INDEFINITE ARTICLE.

#### 14. Masculine :—

- a. Un* before a vowel or any consonant except *s* impure and *z*.  
*b. Uno* before *s* impure or *z*. \*

Ex. : *Un padre*, a father ; *un uomo*, a man.  
*Un anello*, a ring ; *uno specchio*, a mirror.  
*Uno sciame*, a swarm ; *uno zio*, an uncle.

#### 15. Feminine :—

*Una*, which becomes *un'* before a vowel.

Ex. : *Una madre*, a mother ; *un' ora*, an hour.

**16.** In the following cases the indefinite article, though expressed in English, is omitted in Italian :—

*a.* Before a predicate noun expressing occupation, rank, or nationality, and not accompanied by an adjective.

Ex. : *Egli è poeta*, he is a poet ; *sono marchese*, I am a marquis.  
*Siete italiano*, you are an Italian.

*b.* Generally before an antecedent (of a relative clause) used in apposition to a preceding noun modified by a definite article or a demonstrative pronoun.

Ex. : *L' Arno, fiume che traversa Firenze*, the Arno, a river which traverses Florence.

*c.* After *da* meaning "as," "like," or "for." See 79, *g*.

Ex. : *Da uomo*, like a man.

---

\* Some writers use *un* before *z* and before *sci-* or *sci-*.

## EXERCISE 1.

La parte più alta del nostro corpo è il capo. Il capo è attaccato  
*highest is is attached*  
 al collo, e il collo è attaccato al tronco. La parte davanti del  
*front*  
 capo si chiama viso. Nel viso ci sono la fronte, gli occhi, il  
*is-called there are eyes*  
 naso, la bocca, il mento. Cogli occhi si vedono le cose. Col  
*we-see things*  
 naso si sentono gli odori. Colla bocca si mangia, si beve, si  
*we-smell odors we-eat we-drink we-*  
*breathe*  
 respira. Respirare è mandare l'aria giù nel petto, e poi riman-  
*it We breathe Take*  
 darsela fuori. Noi respiriamo l'aria. Levate un pesce dall'acqua,  
*it-dies take from us shall-die.*  
 muore: levate l'aria a noi, e noi morremo.

## EXERCISE 2.

Write

Mr. Rossi is a merchant. Leaving Italy, he went-away last  
*è Lasciando partì*  
 year to France, a country which he wished to visit with his brother  
*per voléva visitare*  
 and a friend of the family. But he returned to Italy the same  
*tornò in*  
 month, saying: "Travelling<sup>1</sup> bores-me. Another time I shall-make  
*dicendo viaggiare (m.) mi sècca Un' altra farò*  
 a study of the customs of France. Paris is a big city; we-have-  
*costumi (m. pl.) grande vi abbiamo*  
 seen some<sup>2</sup> fine things; but I-prefer the land of Garibaldi and  
*veduto belle cose (f. pl.) mi piace più*  
 of King Victor Emmanuel."

<sup>1</sup> See 13, b.<sup>2</sup> See 12, a.

## NOUNS.



17. Italian nouns are not declined. Possession is de-  
 noted by the preposition *di*: as *lo spécchio di mio padre*,  
 "my father's looking-glass."



## GENDER.

## 18. There are no neuter nouns in Italian.\*

Nouns denoting males and females keep their natural gender, whatever their termination may be : except *guida*, "guide" ; *guardia*, "guard" ; *persona*, "person" ; *sentinella*, "sentinel" ; *spia*, "spy" ; which are feminine.

Ex. : *Il fratello*, the brother ; *mia sorella*, my sister.

*Il poeta*, the poet ; *la poetessa*, the poetess.

*Una spia*, a spy ; *la nostra guida*, our guide.

19. Of nouns denoting objects without sex some are masculine, some feminine. Their gender can often be determined by the final letter. All Italian nouns end in *a*, *e*, *i*, *o*, or *u* : † —

*a*. Those ending in *a* are feminine ; except *colèra*, "cholera," *qualcosa*, "something," Greek neuters in *-ma*, ‡ many geographical names, and a few other words, mostly foreign.

Ex. : *Un' ora*, an hour ; *un telegramma*, a telegram.

*Il Canadà*, Canada ; *il sofà*, the sofa.

*b*. Of those ending in *e* and *i* some are masculine, some feminine. All ending in *-zione*, *-gione*, or *-udine* are feminine.

Ex. : *Il fiume*, the river ; *la pace*, peace.

*Un dì*, a day ; *una metropoli*, a metropolis.

*La ragione*, the reason ; *la servitùdine*, service.

*c*. Those ending in *o* are masculine ; except *màno*, "hand."

Ex. : *Il ginocchio*, the knee ; *la mano*, the hand.

\* Latin neuters become masculine in Italian ; masculines and feminines retain their Latin gender. This rule has very few exceptions.

† A few foreign nouns used in Italian end in a consonant : as *lapis*, "pencil" ( *i lapis*, "the pencils" ). Nouns in *-o* or *-e* often drop that vowel if the preceding consonant is *l*, *n*, or *r* : as *canè* = *can*, "dog."

‡ Mostly scientific terms.

*d.* Those ending in *u* are feminine; except *sopra più*, "surplus," and a few foreign words.

Ex.: *La virtù*, virtue; *il bambù*, bamboo.

**20.** Any other part of speech (except an adjective\*) used as a noun must be masculine.

Ex.: *Il viaggiare*, travelling.

**21.** Masculine names of trees in *o* or *e* have a feminine form in *a* or *e* respectively, denoting their fruit; but *il dattero*, "date," *il fico*, "fig," *il limone*, "lemon," *il pomo*, "apple," are always the same, whether denoting the tree or the fruit.

Ex.: *Un susino*, a plum-tree; *una susina*, a plum.

*Il nocce*, the walnut-tree; *la nocce*, the walnut.

*Questi fichi*, these fig-trees, these figs.

### NUMBER.

**22.** Feminines in unaccented *a* form their plural by changing *a* into *e*.

Ex.: *La strada*, the street; *le strade*, the streets.

*Una bugia*, a lie; *le bugie*, lies.

*a.* Feminines in *-ca* and *-ga* form their plural in *-che* and *-ghe* respectively (the *h* being inserted merely to indicate that the *c* and *g* keep their hard sound).

Ex.: *Un' oca*, a goose; *molte oche*, many geese.

*La bottega*, the shop; *parecchie botteghe*, several shops.

\* Adjectives of course have the gender of the nouns they represent.

b. Nouns in unaccented *-cia* and *-gia* form their plural in *-ce* and *-ge* respectively.\*

Ex.: *La guancia*, the cheek; *le guance*, the cheeks.  
*Una ciliegia*, a cherry; *tante ciliege*, so many cherries.

23. Masculines in unaccented *a* and all nouns in unaccented *o* and *e* (not *ie*) form their plural in *i*.†

Ex.: *Un poeta*, a poet; *due poeti*, two poets.  
*Lo zio*, the uncle; *gli zii*, the uncles.  
*La mano*, the hand; *le mie mani*, my hands.  
*Un mese*, a month; *tre mesi*, three months.  
*La cornice*, the frame; *quattro cornici*, four frames.

a. Masculines in *-ca* and *-ga* form their plural in *-chi* and *-ghi* respectively.

Ex.: *Il monarca*, the monarch; *i monarchi*, the monarchs.  
*Il collega*, the colleague; *i colleghi*, the colleagues.

b. Nouns in unaccented *-io* form their plural by changing *-io* to *-i* (often written *i*, *j*, or *ii*).

Ex.: *Lo specchio*, the mirror; *gli specchi*, the mirrors.  
*Il ciliegio*, the cherry-tree; *i ciliegi*, the cherry-trees.

c. Nouns in *-go* form their plural in *-ghi*. Nouns in *-co* form their plural in *-chi* if the penult is accented, otherwise in *-ci*.

Ex.: *Il castigo*, the punishment; *i castighi*, the punishments.  
*Un catalogo*, a catalogue; *due cataloghi*, two catalogues.  
*Il fico*, the fig; *cinque fichi*, five figs.  
*Antico*, ancient; *gli antichi*, the ancients.  
*Un medico*, a doctor; *sei medici*, six doctors.

This rule has a number of exceptions. In the following lists, words whose irregular plural is rare are omitted.

---

\* *Provincia* has *province*. In general borrowed words and words whose plural is necessarily very rare keep the *i*: *audacia*, *audacie*.

† In old Italian and in poetry words in *-ello* and *-ale* often form their plural in *-egli* or *-ei*, *-agli* or *-ai*: *capello*, *capèi*.

(1) Compound nouns in *-logo* denoting persons engaged in the sciences, and all compound nouns in *-fago* form their plural in *-gi*.\*

Ex.: *Il fisiólogo*, the physiologist; *i fisiólogi*, physiologists.

*Antropófago*, cannibal; *antropófagi*, cannibals.

(2) The following words form their plural in *-ci*, although the penult is accented:—

amíco      grêco      inimíco      nemíco      pórco †

*Grêco* has a regular plural in the expression *vini grêchi*.

(3) The following words form their plural in *-chi*, although the penult is unaccented:—

ábbaco	fármaco	lástrico	rammárico	stráscico
acróstico	índaco	mánico	rlsico	tòssico
cárico †	intónaco	párroco	sciático	tráffico
diméntico ‡	intrínseco	pízzico	stômaco	válico §

*Acróstico* and *fármaco* have also regular plurals.

d. Some masculines in *o* have an irregular plural in *a*; this plural is feminine. They are: *centináio*, "hundred"; *migliáio*, "thousand"; *miglio*, "mile"; *páio*, "pair"; *uovo*, "egg."

Many masculines in *o* have this irregular feminine plural in *a* besides the regular masculine plural in *i*. The most common are: *bráccio*, "arm"; *dito*, "finger"; *frutto*, "fruit"; *ginocchio*, "knee"; *grido*, "shout"; *lábbro*, "lip"; *légno*, "wood"; *mèmbro*, "member"; *múro*, "wall"; *orécchio*, "ear"; *osso*, "bone."

\* Likewise the rare or obsolete words: *flemmagógo*, *idragógo*, *metallúrgo*, *sárgo* (also reg. plur.), *sortilego*. "Magicians" = *mdghi*, "magi" = *mdgi*.

† Likewise the rare words: *aprico*, *lombrico* (also reg.), *uvamico*, *vico*.

‡ Likewise its compounds.

§ Likewise the rare or obsolete words: *fildeccico*, *mdntaco* (also reg.), *ostático*, *sfildeccico*, *stático* (noun), *úncico*.

Ex. : *Un páio*, a pair ; *sette páia*, seven pairs.

*Il mto bráccio*, my arm ; *le tue bráccia*, thy arms.

*Il lábbro*, the lip ; *le lábbra* or *i lábbri*, the lips.

*Un ósso*, a bone ; *le óssa* or *gli óssi*, the bones.

*Bráccio*, *ginóccchio*, *lábbro*, and *orecchio* nearly always have the irregular plural when denoting the two arms, knees, lips, or ears belonging to the same body.

24. All monosyllables, and all nouns ending in *i*, *ie*, *u*, an accented vowel, or a consonant, are invariable.

Ex. : *Il re*, the king ; *i re*, the kings.

*Il bríndisi*, the toast ; *i bríndisi*, the toasts.

*Úna spèce*, a kind ; *óttó spèce*, eight kinds.

*La virtù*, virtue ; *le virtù*, the virtues.

*Úna città*, a city ; *díeci città*, ten cities.

25. The following nouns have irregular plurals : *búe*, "ox," pl. *budi* ; *díto*, "god," pl. *déi* \* ; *mógli*, "wife," pl. *mógli* ; *uómo*, "man," pl. *uómini*.

### EXERCISE 3.

Gli uccèlli, le farfálle, i pésci, il cáne, il micio, le lucêrtole sòno<sup>1</sup> tútti animáli. Il gátto e il cáne sòno<sup>1</sup> animáli che hánno<sup>2</sup> quáttro gámbe, hánno<sup>3</sup> quáttro pièdi, e però si chiámano<sup>4</sup> quadrúpedi. Il leóne è<sup>1</sup> il piú bèllo e il piú maestóso déi quadrúpedi. Gli uccèlli hánno<sup>3</sup> dúe zámpe ; ed hánno<sup>3</sup> le áli e con le áli vólano.<sup>5</sup> Anche le farfálle hánno<sup>3</sup> le áli, anche le ápi hánno<sup>3</sup> le áli, e vólano.<sup>5</sup> Le mósche, le zanzáre, le vêspe, e pòi mólti álti animálíni, símili a quèsti, si chiámano<sup>4</sup> insètti. Gli uccèlli e gl' insètti náscono<sup>6</sup> dálle uóva. Tútti quèsti animáli vívono<sup>7</sup> in mêtzo all' ária. I pésci vívono<sup>7</sup> in mêtzo all' ácqua. I pésci non hánno<sup>2</sup> gámbe ; hánno<sup>3</sup> dálle párti quélle alettíne ; e con quèste piccòle

---

\* The article used with *déi* is *gli* : *gli déi*.

alétte e con la còda nuòtano<sup>8</sup> e guízzan<sup>9</sup> via nell' áqua, lèsti lèsti còme un lámpo. Quélle alétte si chiámano<sup>4</sup> pínne. Le lucértole striscian<sup>11</sup> su' múri, hánno<sup>8</sup> délle zampíne, ma rasènti rasènti al còrpo, e quándo si muòvono<sup>10</sup> ánche sùlla tètta, strisciano.<sup>11</sup> Le sèrpi non hánno<sup>2</sup> gámbe; e quèsti animáli che non hánno<sup>2</sup> gámbe e che strisciano<sup>11</sup> sulla tètta, còme le lucértole e le sèrpi, si chiáman<sup>4</sup> rèttili.

- <sup>1</sup> È = is; *sóno* = are. <sup>2</sup> Have. <sup>3</sup> They have. <sup>4</sup> *Si chidmano* = are called. <sup>5</sup> They fly. <sup>6</sup> Are born. <sup>7</sup> Live. <sup>8</sup> They swim. <sup>9</sup> Dart. <sup>10</sup> *Si muòvono* = they move. <sup>11</sup> Crawl, they crawl.

EXERCISE 4.<sup>1</sup>

Mignonettes are<sup>2</sup> born from the seed. The seed, placed under ground, has<sup>3</sup> sprouted; from one side it-has<sup>3</sup> put-out<sup>4</sup> shoots, which have-spread-out<sup>5</sup> through<sup>6</sup> the ground, and from one side it-has<sup>3</sup> sent forth the stalk, the little-branches,<sup>7</sup> the leaves, and<sup>8</sup> the flowers. Like mignonettes,<sup>8</sup> many other<sup>26</sup> plants, herbs, and<sup>9</sup> flowers spring<sup>10</sup> from the seed. Flowers, herbs, grain, and trees are-called<sup>11</sup> vegetables. Vegetables have<sup>3</sup> roots, trunk, branches, twigs, leaves, flowers, and<sup>9</sup> fruit. Plants first produce<sup>12</sup> the flower and then the fruit. The trunk or stalk of plants is<sup>2</sup> that<sup>13</sup> which rests<sup>14</sup> on the roots and<sup>15</sup> comes<sup>16</sup> out from the ground;<sup>17</sup> it-is-covered<sup>18</sup> with<sup>19</sup> branches and with<sup>19</sup> leaves. Of the stalk of plants, — for instance, of the trunk of trees, — we-make-use<sup>20</sup> for many purposes; we-make<sup>21</sup> furniture, doors, windows, the beams that support<sup>22</sup> ceilings, ships, carriages, and<sup>9</sup> cars. The branches of trees are-burned,<sup>23</sup> and give-us<sup>24</sup> fire. Vegetables in-order-to<sup>25</sup> live have<sup>3</sup> need of earth, of water, and<sup>9</sup> of light.

- <sup>1</sup> See 13, *b*. <sup>2</sup> Is = è; are = *sóno*. <sup>3</sup> Has, it has = *ha*; have = *hanno*. <sup>4</sup> *Méso*. <sup>5</sup> *Si sóno distése*. <sup>6</sup> *Fra*. <sup>7</sup> *Ramicélli*. <sup>8</sup> Insert "and so." <sup>9</sup> Omit. <sup>10</sup> *Náscono*. <sup>11</sup> *Si chidmano*. <sup>12</sup> *Fánno*. <sup>13</sup> *Quéllo*. <sup>14</sup> *Pòsa*. <sup>15</sup> Insert "which." <sup>16</sup> *Viéne*. <sup>17</sup> Insert "and." <sup>18</sup> *Si ricuòpre*. <sup>19</sup> *Di*. <sup>20</sup> *Ci servidmo*. <sup>21</sup> *Facciámo*. <sup>22</sup> *Règgono*. <sup>23</sup> *Si brúciano*. <sup>24</sup> *Ci dànnno*. <sup>25</sup> *Per*. <sup>26</sup> Many other = *mólte áltre*.

## ADJECTIVES.

**26.** Adjectives agree with their substantives in gender and number. An adjective modifying two nouns of different genders is generally put in the masculine plural.

Ex.: *Il gatto è pulito*, the cat is neat; *stanze pulite*, neat rooms.  
*Una casa e un giardino bellini*, a pretty house and garden.

**27.** Numeral and pronominal adjectives and the commonest adjectives of size and quantity precede their nouns; adjectives of nationality, shape, and material follow; *bello*, *buono*, and adjectives whose use is prompted by emotion, generally precede. Otherwise, of the noun and adjective, the one that contains the chief idea comes last.

Ex.: *La seconda volta*, the second time; *questa volta*, this time.  
*Troppo pane*, too much bread; *le grandi città*, great cities.  
*Questa palla rotonda*, this round ball.  
*La buona madre*, the good mother; *pover' uomo*, poor man!  
*La vostra gentilissima lettera*, your kind letter.  
*È un uomo gentilissimo*, he is a kind man.

## GENDER AND NUMBER

**28.** Adjectives ending in *o* are masculine, and form their feminine in *a*. Adjectives in *e* are invariable in the singular.

Ex.: *Buono stivalotto*, good boot; *buona scarpa*, good shoe.  
*Ragazzo felice*, happy boy; *ragazza felice*, happy girl.

**29.** Adjectives form their plural in the same way as nouns (see **22**, **23**).

Ex.: *Six buoni cassettoni*, six good bureaus; *otto buone seggiole*, eight good chairs.  
*Due uomini felici*, two happy men *tre donne felici*, three happy women.

a. *Parécchi*, "several," has for its feminine *parécchie*.

b. *Qualche*, "some," is used only in the singular, even when the meaning is plural: as *qualche volta*, "sometimes."

c. When preceding a noun, *bèllo*, "beautiful," has forms similar to those of the definite article; and *Sánto*, "Saint," and *gránde*, "great," have corresponding forms in the singular.\* *Buóno*, "good," when preceding its noun, has a singular similar to the indefinite article. The masculine of these words (which is the only irregular part) is, therefore, as follows:—

Before any consonant except *s* impure or *z*: *bel*, *San*, *gran*, *buon*;  
pl. *bèi*, *Sánti*, *grándi*, *buóni*.

Before *s* impure or *z*: *bèllo*, *Sánto*, *gránde*, *buóno*; pl. *bègli*, *Sánti*,  
*grándi*, *buóni*.

Before a vowel: *bèll'*, *San'*, *grand'*, *buon*; pl. *bègli*, *Sánti*, *grándi*,  
*buóni*.

When used *after* a noun or in the predicate these adjectives have their full forms (*bèllo*, *bèlli*, *Sánto*, *Sánti*, *gránde*, *grándi*, *buóno*, *buóni*).

Ex.: *Un bel quaddro*, a fine picture; *dúe bèi lètti*, two fine beds.

*Un bello scaffale*, a fine bookcase; *quáttro bègli stivdi*, four fine boots.

*Un bèll' andito*, a fine hall; *mólti bègli orològi*, many fine clocks.

*Una bella stúfa*, a fine stove; *parécchie belle tènde*, several fine curtains.

*Il palazzo è bello*, the palace is fine; *le sèdie son belle*, the chairs are beautiful.

*San Piètro, Sánto Stéfano e San' Antònio*, St. Peter, St. Stephen, and St. Anthony.

*Un gran fuóco*, a big fire; *grándi camini*, big fire-places.

---

\* *Gran* is, moreover, often used in the fem. sing. (for *gránde*), and sometimes in the plur. (for *grándi*); it is regularly used before fem. sing. nouns in *-e*, and in the expression *una gran bella* (or *brúta*) *côsa*.



*Il grande scaldino*, the big foot-warmer; *dieci grandi spilli*, ten big pins.

*Un grande sciame*, a great swarm; *il grande zupolo*, the large bung.

*Un grand' armadio*, a big wardrobe; *venti grandi alberi*, twenty big trees.

*Una grande camera*, a large bedroom; *cinque grandi finestre*, five big windows.

*Il salotto è molto grande*, the parlor is very large.

*Un buon lume*, a good lamp; *buoni fiammiferi*, good matches.

*Il buono sgabello*, the good stool; *nove buoni scolari*, nine good pupils.

*Il buon olio*, the good oil; *parecchi buoni aghi*, several good needles.

*Una buona cucina*, a good kitchen; *le buone candele*, the good candles.

*Il bambino è buono*, the child is good.

**30.** Any adjective of either gender or either number may be used as a noun.

Ex.: *I buoni*, the good; *la bella*, the beautiful woman.

### COMPARISON.

**31.** All Italian adjectives form their comparative by prefixing *più* "more," and their superlative by prefixing the definite article to the comparative. When the superlative immediately follows the noun, this article is omitted.

Ex.: *Bello*, beautiful; *più bello*, more beautiful; *il più bello*, the most beautiful.

*Lungo*, long; *più lungo*, longer; *il più lungo*, the longest.

*La via più corta*, the shortest way.

a. The following adjectives have an irregular comparison in addition to the regular one: —

*Alto*, high; *più alto* or *superiore*; *il più alto* or *il superiore*.

*Basso*, low; *più basso* or *inferiore*; *il più basso* or *l'inferiore*.

*Buòno*, good; *più buòno* or *miglióre*; \* *il più buòno* or *il migliore*.

*Cattivo*, bad; *più cattivo* or *peggióre*; \* *il più cattivo* or *il peggióre*.

*Grande*, big; *più grande* or *maggióre*; *il più grande* or *il maggióre*.

*Piccolo*, small; *più piccolo* or *minóre*; *il più piccolo* or *il minóre*.

"Higher" and "lower" are commonly rendered by *più álto* and *più bàsso*; *superióre* and *inferióre* generally mean "superior" and "inferior." *Miglióre* and *peggióre* are more used than *più buòno* and *più cattivo*, which have the same sense. "Larger" and "smaller" are generally *più grande* and *più piccolo*; *maggióre* and *minóre* usually signify "older" and "younger."

Ex.: *Noi sidmo miglióri di lóro*, we are better than they.

*Questa sala da pranzo è la più grande*, this dining-room is the biggest.

*Pietro è il fratello minóre*, Peter is the youngest brother.

**32.** The adverb "less" is expressed by *méno*, "least" by *il méno*. "As . . . as," "so . . . as" are *tánto . . . quánto*, *tánto . . . cóme*, *così . . . cóme*, or simply *quánto*.

Ex.: *Quella stánza è la méno bellina*, that room is the least pretty.

*Paolo non è tánto buòno cóme Roberto*, Paul isn't so good as Robert.

*Giovánni è álto quánto Filippo*, John is as tall as Philip.

**33.** "Than" is *che*.

Ex.: *L' albergo è più grande che bello*, the hotel is bigger than it is beautiful.

But before a noun, a pronoun, or a numeral "than" is rendered by the preposition *di* (see 12). If, however, this "than" is preceded by a word meaning "rather," it is translated *che*.

---

\* The adverbs "better" and "worse" are *méglio* and *péggio*.

Ex.: *Riccardo è peggiore di Guglielmo*, Richard is worse than William.

*Voi siete più ricchi di noi*, you are richer than we.

*Meno di cinque*, less than five.

*Piuttosto la morte che il disonore*, rather death than dishonor.

Before an inflected verb "than" is *che non* or *di quel che*.

Ex.: *Abbia più che non morde*, he barks more than he bites.

*Prometto meno di quel che do*, I promise less than I give.

34. "The more . . . the more," "the less . . . the less" are *più . . . più*, *meno . . . meno*. "More" and "less" after a number are *di più*, *di meno*. In speaking of time, "longer" after a negative is *più*.

Ex.: *Più studio, più imparo*, the more I study, the more I learn

*Trenta giorni di meno*, thirty days less.

*Non lo vediamo più*, we see him no longer.

#### EXERCISE 5.

Il sóle è<sup>1</sup> un glóbo grandíssimo e sêmpre infocáto: éssó è<sup>1</sup> gránde óltre un milióne di vólte più délla têrra; e díre<sup>2</sup> che a' nôstri ôcchi apparísce<sup>3</sup> tánto più piccólo! Ánche la lúna, che splênde<sup>4</sup> duránte la nôtte, è<sup>1</sup> rotónda, ma è<sup>1</sup> mólto più piccóla délla têrra, e gíra<sup>5</sup> intórno a quéstá<sup>6</sup> contínovaménte. La lúna non ha<sup>1</sup> lúce da sè, ma la ricéve<sup>7</sup> dal sóle. Êcco<sup>8</sup> perchè la lúna óra la vediámo<sup>9</sup> e óra non la vediámo<sup>9</sup> più, óra ne vediámo<sup>9</sup> mēzza, óra uno spícchio, óra un po' più, óra un po' ménó, secóndo che di éssa ci si presênta<sup>10</sup> úna párté maggióre o minóre illumináta dal sóle. Le stélle sóno<sup>1</sup> tútti quéi<sup>11</sup> púnti luminósi che vediámo<sup>9</sup> brilláre di<sup>12</sup> nôtte nel firmaménto. Non crediáte,<sup>13</sup> però, che le stélle siano<sup>1</sup> piccóle cóme nói le vediámo<sup>9</sup>: ci páiono<sup>14</sup> cosí piccíne per la smisuráta distánza che córre<sup>15</sup> da lóro a nói; ma le stélle sóno<sup>1</sup> grandíssime, e ce n'è di quélle<sup>16</sup> che sóno<sup>1</sup> in-

finitaménte più grándi del sóle. Gli è<sup>1</sup> che il sóle è<sup>1</sup> méno lontano di ésse dálla têrra che nói abitiámo.<sup>17</sup>

- <sup>1</sup> È = is; *sóno, stano* (subj.) = are; *ha* = has. <sup>2</sup> To think. <sup>3</sup> It seems. <sup>4</sup> Shines. <sup>5</sup> Turns. <sup>6</sup> It. <sup>7</sup> *La ricíve* = receives it. <sup>8</sup> That is. <sup>9</sup> *Vedidmo* = we see; *la vedidmo* = we see it; *le vedidmo* = we see them; *ne vedidmo* = we see of it. <sup>10</sup> *Ci si presêta* = there presents itself to us. <sup>11</sup> Those. <sup>12</sup> At. <sup>13</sup> *Non credidte* = do not think. <sup>14</sup> *Ci pdiono* = they seem to us. <sup>15</sup> Intervenes. <sup>16</sup> *Ce n' è di quélle* = there are some. <sup>17</sup> Inhabit.

### EXERCISE 6.

The moon is<sup>1</sup> in the middle of<sup>2</sup> the sky. The moon is<sup>1</sup> round ; it-looks<sup>3</sup> perfectly round like a melon. And it-looks,<sup>3</sup> too, as big as a melon. The moon seems<sup>4</sup> little because it-is<sup>1</sup> far, far from us who are<sup>5</sup> on the earth. The moon renders<sup>6</sup> a great service to men : because when everything is<sup>1</sup> dark, it<sup>7</sup> illumines<sup>8</sup> with its beautiful light the earth which we-inhabit.<sup>9</sup> The stars are<sup>10</sup> larger than the moon, but to-look-at-them<sup>11</sup> they-seem<sup>12</sup> smaller, because they-are<sup>10</sup> so-much<sup>13</sup> further than the moon. The most beautiful,<sup>14</sup> the most intense<sup>14</sup> light comes<sup>15</sup> from the sun.

- <sup>1</sup> È. <sup>2</sup> A. <sup>3</sup> *Par* or *päre*. <sup>4</sup> *Si véde*. <sup>5</sup> *Sidmo*. <sup>6</sup> *Fa*. <sup>7</sup> *Éssa*. <sup>8</sup> *Rischidra*. <sup>9</sup> *Abitidmo*. <sup>10</sup> *Sóno*. <sup>11</sup> *A vedérle*. <sup>12</sup> *Pdiono*. <sup>13</sup> *Tánto*. <sup>14</sup> Both adjectives follow the noun. <sup>15</sup> *Viéne*.

## AUGMENTATIVES AND DIMINUTIVES; NUMERALS.

### AUGMENTATIVE AND DIMINUTIVE ENDINGS.

**35.** Instead of a word expressing size or quality the Italians often use a suffix. This suffix may be added to a noun, an adjective, or an adverb. When added to an adjective, and generally when added to a noun, it takes the gender of the word to which it is affixed : occasionally,

however, a suffix with masculine termination is added to a feminine noun, which thereby becomes masculine. A word loses its final vowel before a suffix; but the preceding consonant, if it be *c* or *g*, must keep its former quality: as *Cárlo* + *ino* = *Carlino*, *vóce* + *óne* = *vocióne*, *póco* + *ino* = *pochino*, *adágio* + *ino* = *adagino*.

a. The commonest ending is *-issimo* (fem. *-issima*), "very," which in general is added only to adjectives and adverbs. Adverbs in *-mente* add the *-issima* before the *-mente* (see 85). Any adjective may take it, and it is very often used in cases where it would be entirely superfluous in English.

Ex.: *Largo*, wide; *larghissimo*, very wide.  
*Bene*, well; *bentissimo*, very well.  
*Grande*, big; *grandissimo*, very big.  
*Fa un tempo bellissimo*, it's beautiful weather.  
*Bellissimamente*, very beautifully.

b. The principal suffix denoting bigness is *-one*; it is always masculine, but has a rare feminine form, *-ona*.

Ex.: *Libro*, book; *librone*, big book.  
*Casa*, house; *casone*, large house.  
*Boccia*, decanter; *bocciona*, big decanter.

c. The most important suffixes denoting smallness are *-ino*, *-cino*, *-icino*, *-étto*, *-éllo*, *-céllo*, *-icéllo*, *-aréllo*, *-eréllo*, *-otto*, *-úccio*, *-úzzo*, *-uólo*, with their fem. *-ina*, etc. These endings, especially *-úccio*, are often used to express affection; some of them may be used to express pity or contempt. *Ótto* sometimes means "somewhat large" instead of "small."

Ex.: *Sorella*, sister; *sorellina*, little sister.  
*Bello*, beautiful; *bellino*, pretty.  
*Brutto*, ugly; *bruttino*, rather ugly.  
*Piazza*, square; *piazzétta*, little square.  
*Giorgio*, George; *Giorgétto*, Georgie.

*Campana*, bell; *campanello*, little bell.

*Aquila*, eagle; *aquilotto*, eaglet.

*Casa*, house; *casotta*, rather large house.

*Giovanni*, John; *Giovannuccio*, dear little Johnny.

*Pazzo*, mad; *pazzarella*, poor mad woman.

*Povero*, poor; *poverini*, poor things!

d. The ending *-uccio* denotes worthlessness.

Ex.: *Roba*, stuff, goods; *robaucia*, trash.

*Tempo*, weather; *tempaccio*, nasty weather.

*Alfredo*, Alfred; *Alfreduccio*, naughty Alfred.

36. Of the endings added to nouns *-ino* is by far the most common; the only ones that are freely used to form new compounds are *-ino*, "little," *-one*, "great," *-uccio*, "dear," and *-uccio*, "bad." In very many cases endings lose their character of independent suffixes, and become inseparable parts of certain words, whose meanings they often change: as *scala*, "stairway"; *scalino*, "stair"; *scalétto*, "ladder." Some suffixes (as *-uolo*) are rarely used except in this way. Others (as *-ino*, *-icino*, *-ello*, *-ello*, *-icello*, *-arello*, *-erello*) cannot be attached to any word at pleasure, their use being determined by precedent or euphony.

37. Sometimes several suffixes are added at once to the same word: as *ladro*, "thief"; *ladrone*, "terrible thief"; *ladroncello*, "terrible little thief."

## NUMERALS.

38. The cardinal numerals are:—

1, <i>uno</i> .	5, <i>cinque</i> .	9, <i>nove</i> .	13, <i>trédici</i> .
2, <i>due</i> .	6, <i>sèi</i> .	10, <i>dièci</i> .	14, <i>quattòrdici</i> .
3, <i>tre</i> .	7, <i>sétte</i> .	11, <i>undici</i> .	15, <i>quindici</i> .
4, <i>quattro</i> .	8, <i>otto</i> .	12, <i>dodici</i> .	16, <i>sédici</i> .

17, <i>diciassette.</i>	26, <i>ventisèti.</i>	50, <i>cinquanta.</i>	125, <i>cento venti-</i>
18, <i>diciotto.</i>	27, <i>ventisette.</i>	60, <i>sessanta.</i>	<i>cinque.</i>
19, <i>diciannove.</i>	28, <i>ventitto or</i>	70, <i>settanta.</i>	200, <i>dugento or</i>
20, <i>venti.</i>	<i>vent' otto.</i>	80, <i>ottanta.</i>	<i>duecento.</i>
21, <i>ventuno or</i>	29, <i>ventinove.</i>	90, <i>novanta.</i>	250, <i>dugento cin-</i>
<i>vent' uno.</i>	30, <i>trenta.</i>	100, <i>cento.</i>	<i>quanta.</i>
22, <i>ventidue.</i>	31, <i>trentuno or</i>	101, <i>centuno or</i>	300, <i>trecento.</i>
23, <i>ventitrè.</i>	<i>trent' uno.</i>	<i>cent' uno.</i>	400, <i>quattrocento.</i>
24, <i>ventiquattro.</i>	32, <i>trentadue.</i>	105, <i>centocinque.</i>	1000, <i>mille.</i>
25, <i>venticinque.</i>	40, <i>quaranta.</i>	115, <i>centoquindici.</i>	2000, <i>due mila.</i>

*Uno* has a feminine *una* ; when used adjectively *uno* has the same forms as the indefinite article. The plural of *mille* is *mila*. "A million" is *un milione* or *millione*, of which the plural is *milioni* or *millioni*.

(1) No conjunction is used between the different parts of a number: as *dugento quaranta*, "two hundred and forty." No indefinite article is used before *cento* and *mille*: as *cento libri*, "a hundred books."

(2) *Cento*, *dugento*, etc., when followed by another numeral of more than two syllables may lose the final syllable *-to*: as *seicento cinquanta* or *seicencinquanta*, "six hundred and fifty."

(3) "Eleven hundred," "twelve hundred," etc., must be rendered *millecento*, *mille dugento*, etc.: as *mille ottocento ottantasette*, 1887.

(4) "Both," "all three," etc., are *tutti* (fem. *tutte*) *e due*, *tutti* (fem. *tutte*) *e tre*, etc.

a. If the noun modified by *ventuno*, *trentuno*, etc., follows the numeral, it should be in the singular; if it precedes, in the plural.

Ex.: *Sessantuna lira* or *lire sessantuna*, 61 francs.

b. In dates the definite article is prefixed to the number representing the year, if that number follows a preposition, or does not follow the name of a month.

Ex.: *Nel mille ottocento ottantasette*, in 1887.

c. "What time is it?" is *che ora è?* "It is six," etc., is *sóno le sèi*, etc., *óre* being understood. "One o'clock" is *il tòcco*.

Ex.: *Sóno le dúe e mèzzo*, it's half-past two.

*Sóno le tre e dièci*, it's ten minutes past three.

*Ci máncano vènti minúti dille quáttro*, it's twenty minutes to four.

*Sóno le cinque méno un quárto*, it's a quarter to five.

### 39. The ordinal numerals are:—

1st, <i>primo</i> .	12th, <i>duodécimo</i> or	20th, <i>ventésimo</i> .
2d, <i>secóndo</i> .	<i>décimo secóndo</i> .	21st, <i>ventésimo primo</i> or
3d, <i>térzo</i> .	13th, <i>tredicésimo</i> or	<i>ventunésimo</i> .
4th, <i>quárto</i> .	<i>décimo térzo</i> .	22d, <i>ventésimo secóndo</i>
5th, <i>quínto</i> .	14th, <i>quattordicésimo</i> or	or <i>ventiduéesimo</i> .
6th, <i>sèsto</i> .	<i>décimo quárto</i> .	30th, <i>trentésimo</i> .
7th, <i>séttimo</i> .	15th, <i>quindicésimo</i> or	100th, <i>centésimo</i> .
8th, <i>ottávo</i> .	<i>décimo quínto</i> .	101st, <i>centésimo primo</i> .
9th, <i>nóno</i> .	16th, <i>décimo sèsto</i> .	115th, <i>centoquindicésimo</i> .
10th, <i>décimo</i> .	17th, <i>décimo séttimo</i> .	200th, <i>dugentésimo</i> .
11th, <i>undécimo</i> or	18th, <i>décimo ottávo</i> .	1000th, <i>millésimo</i> .
<i>décimo primo</i> .	19th, <i>décimo nóno</i> .	2000th, <i>duemilésimo</i> .

All of them form their feminines and plurals like other adjectives in *o*.

Ex.: *Le settantésime quínte còse*, the 75th things.

a. Ordinal numerals are used after the words "book," "chapter," and the names of rulers; but no article intervenes.

Ex.: *Carlo secóndo*, Charles the Second; *Pio nóno*, Pius IX.

*Libro térzo*, Book the Third; *capítolo quárto*, chapter four.

b. For the day of the month, except the first, a cardinal number is used.

Ex.: *Il dí cinque d' apríle* or *il cinque apríle*, the fifth of April.

*Il primo di mággio*, the first of May.



c. "A third," "a fourth," "a fifth," etc., are *un terzo, un quarto, un quinto*, etc. "Half" is *la metà*; the adjective "half" is *mèzzo*.

40. "A couple" or "a pair" is *un paio*. "A dozen" is *una dozzina*. The expressions *una decina, una ventina, una trentina*, etc., *un centinajo, un miglajo*, mean "about ten," "about twenty," etc. (see 23, d). "Once," "twice," etc., are *una volta, due volte*, etc.

Ex.: *Un paio di scarpe*, a pair of shoes.

*Una cinquantina di persone*, some fifty persons.

*L'ho visto parecchie volte*, I've seen it several times.

#### EXERCISE 7.

*Read*

Con l'orològio si véde<sup>1</sup> che ore sòno.<sup>2</sup> Un giòrno è<sup>3</sup> ventiquàtt' ore. Cêrte ore del giòrno è<sup>2</sup> lúme, cêrte ore è<sup>2</sup> búio. Un giòrno è<sup>3</sup> ventiquàtt' ore, ma sùlla móstra dell' orològio, délle ore ce n'è<sup>4</sup> segnâte dódici, perchè le ore del giòrno si cóntano<sup>5</sup> dall' úna àlle dódici, cosí: tòcco, dúe, tre, quàttrò, cinque, sèi, sètte, ótto, nôve, dièci, úndici e dódici. Arriváti a dódici non si séguita<sup>6</sup> a díre trédici, quattórdici, e vía fino a ventiquàttrò; ma si ricomíncia<sup>7</sup> da cápo dal tòcco e si arriva<sup>8</sup> fino a dódici. Il cónto tórna<sup>9</sup> lo stéssò: infàtti le ore del giòrno son<sup>11</sup> ventiquàttrò; e dódici e dódici, sommáti insième, fórmáno<sup>10</sup> ventiquàttrò. Dódici ore sòno<sup>11</sup> la metà del giòrno. L' orològio ha<sup>12</sup> dódici ore; e le ha<sup>13</sup> segnâte giro giro álla móstra. L' óra è<sup>3</sup> sessánta minúti; e l' orològio ségna<sup>14</sup> ánche i minúti. Quélle righettíne tórno tórno álla móstra, fra un' óra e un' áltra, sòno<sup>11</sup> i sessánta minúti che fórmáno<sup>10</sup> l' óra. La lancétta gránde ségna<sup>14</sup> i minúti. La lancétta piccína ségna<sup>14</sup> le ore. La lancétta gránde ógni óra fa<sup>15</sup> il giro di tútti e sessánta i minúti; gira<sup>16</sup> tútta la móstra. La lancétta piccína ógni óra ségna<sup>14</sup> un número, e a girár tútta la móstra ci mètte<sup>17</sup> dódici ore, perchè dódici son<sup>11</sup> le ore segnâte sùlla mó-

stra. Óra sóno<sup>2</sup> le dódici; tútte e dúe le lancétte sóno<sup>11</sup> sùlle dódici. Fra un' óra la lancétta gránde avrá<sup>13</sup> giráta tútta la móstra, e sará<sup>19</sup> daccápo sul número 12, e la lancétta piccína sará<sup>19</sup> sull' úno.

<sup>1</sup> *Si véde* = we see. <sup>2</sup> It is. <sup>3</sup> Is. <sup>4</sup> *Ce n'è* = there are. <sup>5</sup> *Si contano* = are counted. <sup>6</sup> *Non si séguita* = we don't go on. <sup>7</sup> *Si ricomincia* = we begin over again. <sup>8</sup> *Si arriva* = we go. <sup>9</sup> Amounts to. <sup>10</sup> Make. <sup>11</sup> Are. <sup>12</sup> Has. <sup>13</sup> *Le ha* = it has them. <sup>14</sup> Marks. <sup>15</sup> Makes. <sup>16</sup> It goes around. <sup>17</sup> *Ci mette* = it takes. <sup>18</sup> Will have. <sup>19</sup> Will be.

## EXERCISE 8.

Write

A year is<sup>1</sup> 365 days. Every seven days is<sup>1</sup> a week. The days of the week are-called<sup>2</sup>: Sunday, Monday, Tuesday, Wednesday, Thursday, Friday, Saturday. Sunday<sup>3</sup> is<sup>1</sup> a<sup>4</sup> holiday; the other days we-work,<sup>5</sup> and therefore they-are-called<sup>2</sup> working-days. The year is-divided<sup>6</sup> into twelve months. The months are-called<sup>2</sup>: January, February, March, April, May, June, July, August, September, October, November, December. The month is<sup>1</sup> thirty or thirty-one days. When the month begins,<sup>7</sup> it-is-called<sup>8</sup> the first of the month; the second day is-called<sup>8</sup> the second of the month, the third, the third, and so-on<sup>9</sup> until the thirtieth or thirty-first. January, March, May, July, August, October, and<sup>4</sup> December have<sup>10</sup> thirty-one days. April, June, September, and<sup>4</sup> November have<sup>10</sup> thirty days. February is<sup>1</sup> the shortest month, because it-has<sup>11</sup> twenty-eight days only.<sup>12</sup> But every four years February has<sup>11</sup> twenty-nine days; and that<sup>16</sup> year is-called<sup>13</sup> leap-year. The year begins<sup>7</sup> from January; January is,<sup>1</sup> then,<sup>14</sup> the first month of the year. The year ends<sup>15</sup> with December; so<sup>14</sup> December is<sup>1</sup> the last month of the year.

<sup>1</sup> È. <sup>2</sup> *Si chidmano*. <sup>3</sup> Use def. article. <sup>4</sup> Omit. <sup>5</sup> *Si lavbra*. <sup>6</sup> *Si divide*. <sup>7</sup> *Comincia*. <sup>8</sup> *Si dice*. <sup>9</sup> Così. <sup>10</sup> *Hanno*. <sup>11</sup> *Ha*. <sup>12</sup> *Sóli*. <sup>13</sup> *Si chidma*. <sup>14</sup> *Dunque*. <sup>15</sup> *Fintisce*. <sup>16</sup> *Quell'*.

P. 3-2

## DEMONSTRATIVE, INTERROGATIVE, RELATIVE, AND POSSESSIVE PRONOUNS.

**41.** For the indefinite pronouns, see **86-91**.

**42.** (1) The demonstrative pronouns used adjectively are *questo*, "this," and *quello* or *cotesto*, "that." *Cotesto* (spelled also *codesto*) is used of objects near the person addressed. *Questo* and *cotesto* are inflected like other adjectives; but they generally drop *o* before a vowel. *Quello* is inflected like *bello* (see **29, c**).

Ex.: *Quest' uòmo*, this man; *queste ragazzze*, these girls.  
*Quel bambino*, that infant; *quei fanciulli*, those children.  
*Quell' amico*, that friend; *quegli spòsi*, that couple.  
*Quello zio*, that uncle; *quelle signòre*, those ladies.

• *Questo* and *quello* are also used substantively for "this," "that," "this one," "that one": as *fàte questo, non fàte quello*, "do this, don't do that."

(2) "This man" is translated by *questi*, "that man" by *quelli*, *quèi*, or *cotesti* (rare); these words are invariable, refer only to persons, and are used only in the nominative singular. *Costui* and *colui* mean respectively the same as *questi* and *quelli*, but are not defective, having a feminine singular *costèi*, *colèi*, and a plural (both genders alike) *costòro*, *colóro*. *Costui* is often used in a depreciative sense.

Ex.: *Questi è francèse e quegli è tedèsko*, this man is French and that one is German.

*Chi è costui*, who is this fellow?

*Parlo di colui*, I speak of that man.

(3) *Cid*, "this," "that," is invariable, and represents a whole idea, not a single word: as *cid è véro*, "that's so."

*a. Quello* and *questo*, *quelli* and *questi* mean also "the former," "the latter."

*b. "He who"* is *colui che*, or simply *chi*. "The one who, whom, which," "that which," "what" is *quello che* or *quel che*.

Ex.: *Chi lavora* or *colui che lavora*, he who works.

*Quel che dico io*, the one I mean.

*A quel che sento*, from what I hear.

✓ 43. The interrogative "who," "whom," is *chi*. "What?" used substantively is *che*, *che cosa*, or *cosa*.\* "What?" used adjectively is *che* or *quale*. "Which?" is *quale*. *Quale* has a plural *quali*; *chi* and *che* are invariable. "How much?" is *quanto* (-a), "how many?" is *quanti* (-e).

Ex.: *Chi vedo*, whom do I see?

*Di chi parlate*, of whom do you speak?

*Che cosa dice*, what does he say?

*Che* or *quali libri avete comprato*, what books did you buy?

*Quale di questi volumi è il primo*, which of these volumes is the first?

*a. The interrogative "whose" is di chi.*

Ex.: *Di chi è questo biglietto*, whose card is this?

*b. In exclamations "what a," "what," are rendered by che or quale without any article.*

Ex.: *Che bel paese*, what a beautiful country!

44. The principal relative pronouns are *che*, *cui*, *il quale*: they are all applied to both persons and things, and mean "who," "whom," "which," or "that." *Il quale* is inflected

---

\* *Cosa* (as *cosa dice*?) is generally avoided in written Italian.

(*la quále, i quáli, le quáli*). *Che* and *cúi* are invariable: in general *che* is used only as subject and direct object, *cúi* only after prepositions or as indirect object.

Ex.: *La lingua che si parla*, the language which we speak.

*L' uòmo del quále si trátta*, the man of whom we are speaking.

*Le persòne a cui or dle quáli parlo*, the persons to whom I speak.

*Lo scritto di cui parlo*, the work I am speaking of.

*Ègli è colui, cui fu dato*, he is the man to whom it was given.

(1) As subject or direct object *che* is preferred to *il quále*, unless clearness requires the latter.

(2) The relative "whose" is *il cui* or *del quále*.

Ex.: *Una signóra, il cui nòme è Lucia*, a lady whose name is Lucy.

*Un uòmo, le cui figlie conosco*, a man whose daughters I know.

*L' autóre, del cui libro si parla*, the author whose book we are speaking of.

*Le chiese delle quáli si vedono le cúpole*, the churches whose domes we see.

(3) The relative cannot be omitted in Italian.

Ex.: *Le case che ho comprate*, the houses I have bought.

a. "Such . . . as" is *tále . . . quále*; in poetry *tále* has a plural *tái* instead of *táli*. "As much as" is *tánto quánto*; "as many as" is *tánti quánti*.

Ex.: *Quále è il pádre tále è il figlio*, as is the father, so is the son.

b. "He who" is *chi* or *colui che* (see 42, b).

Ex.: *Chi ha la sanità è ricco*, he who has health is rich.

c. "Whoever" is *chiunque*; "whatever" as a substantive is *tutto quel che* or *checcchè*, as an adjective *quále che, qualunque che, qualunque, per quánto*. These words, excepting *tutto quel che*, all take the subjunctive. *Checchè* is now but little used.

**Ex. :** *Chiunque siddle*, whoever you may be.

*Checchè facciate, fátelo bene*, whatever you do, do it well.

*Tutto quel che volete*, whatever you wish.

*Quali che siano i vostri motivi*, whatever your motives may be.

*Qualunque siano i suoi talenti*, whatever his talents may be.

*In qualunque stato che io mi trovi*, in whatever condition I may find myself.

*Per quante ricchezze egli abbia*, whatever riches he may have.

## 45. The possessive pronouns are :—

My :	m., <i>il mio</i> ,	f., <i>la mia</i> ,	m. pl., <i>i miei</i> ,	f. pl., <i>le mie</i> .
Thy :	<i>il tuo</i> ,	<i>la tua</i> ,	<i>i tuoi</i> ,	<i>le tue</i> .
His, her, its :	<i>il suo</i> ,	<i>la sua</i> ,	<i>i suoi</i> ,	<i>le sue</i> .
Our :	<i>il nostro</i> ,	<i>la nostra</i> ,	<i>i nostri</i> ,	<i>le nostre</i> .
Your :	<i>il vostro</i> ,	<i>la vostra</i> ,	<i>i vostri</i> ,	<i>le vostre</i> .
Their :	<i>il loro</i> ,	<i>la loro</i> ,	<i>i loro</i> ,	<i>le loro</i> .

*Loro* is invariable ; the others agree with the object possessed : as *il mio naso*, "my nose" ; *la sua bocca*, "his, her mouth" ; *i vostri occhi*, "your eyes" ; *le loro labbra*, "their lips."

When the possessive stands alone in the predicate, the article is omitted if the possessive is used adjectively.

**Ex. :** *Questo cappello è mio*, this hat is mine.

*Questo cappello è il mio*, this hat is mine (i.e., the one that belongs to me).

**a.** The article (unless it might be used in English) is omitted before the possessive : (1) When a numeral, an adjective of quantity, or a demonstrative or interrogative adjective precedes it : as *due cani suoi*, "two dogs of his" (but *i due cani suoi*, "the two dogs of his" or "his two dogs") ; *molti miei amici*, "many friends of mine" (but *i molti miei amici*, "the many friends of mine" or "my many friends") ; *questo tuo difetto*, "this fault of thine." (2) When the possessive forms part of a title : as *Vostra Maestà*,

"Your Majesty"; *Sua Altezza*, "His Highness." (3) When the possessive modifies a noun used in the vocative (in this case the possessive generally follows its noun): as *amico mio*, "my friend!"

(4) The article is generally omitted also when the possessive precedes a noun in the singular expressing relationship: as *nostra madre*, "our mother." But if the noun has a diminutive ending, or an adjective precedes the noun, the article is not omitted: as *il tuo fratellino*, "thy little brother"; *la vostra gentilissima sorella*, "your kind sister." (5) The article is omitted also in certain phrases, such as: *da parte mia*, "for me"; *per amor mio*, "for my sake"; *in casa nostra*, "in our house"; *a modo suo*, "in his own way"; *è colpa vostra*, "it's your fault."

b. The possessive, when not necessary for clearness, is usually replaced by a definite article.

Ex.: *Come sta la mamma*, how is your mother?

*Ha perduto il giudizio*, he has lost his senses.

*Battono i piedi*, they stamp their feet.

c. When the name of the thing possessed is direct object of a verb, the Italians often use instead of the possessive a conjunctive personal pronoun (see 47) and a definite article. If the thing possessed be a part of the body or clothing, this construction is frequent, even when the name of the thing is not object of a verb.

Ex.: *Si strappa i capelli*, he tears his hair (lit., he tears to himself the hairs).

*Mi taglio il dito*, I cut my finger (I cut to myself the finger).

*Il cane gli agguantò la gamba*, the dog seized his leg (seized to him the leg).

*Mi duole il capo*, my head aches (to me aches the head).

d. When the possessor is not the subject of the sentence, "his," "her" are, for the sake of clearness, often rendered *di lui*, *di lei*: as *egli non conosce il di lei cuore*, "he does not know her heart."

e. "A . . . of mine, of thine," etc., is *un mio*, *un tuo*, etc.: as *una nostra cugina*, "a cousin of ours."

## EXERCISE 9.

Quándo cádde<sup>1</sup> l' impêro, Siêna soffrì<sup>2</sup> méno délle áltre città toscáne dälle invasióni déi bárbari ; ma vénne<sup>3</sup> sótto la signoría déi Longobárdi, e pòi fu<sup>4</sup> úna délle città libere di Carlomágno, néi cónti e baróni del quále, arricchíti dälle têrre e daí castèlli che diêde<sup>5</sup> lóro<sup>6</sup> l' imperatóre, i nòbili senési crédono<sup>7</sup> trováre l' origine délla lóro nobiltà. Quésti ládri forestiêri, i cúi nídi néi dintórni di Firênze i cittadíni di quéstó comúne cercávano<sup>8</sup> di distrúggere, abbandonárono<sup>9</sup> voluntariaménte i lóro castèlli nel território senése, ed entrárono<sup>10</sup> nélla città, che da éssi e daí véscovi veníva<sup>4</sup> abbellíta di grándi palázzi e governáta con úna máno di fêrro, finchè<sup>11</sup> i comúni non<sup>11</sup> si levárono<sup>12</sup> e non<sup>11</sup> féceró<sup>13</sup> prevalére il lóro diritto a participáre nélla còsa púbblica.

- <sup>1</sup> Fell. <sup>2</sup> Suffered. <sup>3</sup> It came. <sup>4</sup> Was. <sup>5</sup> Gave. <sup>6</sup> To them. <sup>7</sup> Think, believe. <sup>8</sup> Were trying. <sup>9</sup> Abandoned. <sup>10</sup> Entered. <sup>11</sup> *Finchè non* = until. <sup>12</sup> *Si levárono* = arose. <sup>13</sup> Made.

## EXERCISE 10.

Charles V made<sup>1</sup> of Siena a fief for his son Philip II, who ceded-it<sup>2</sup> to Cosimo I, and the latter built-there<sup>3</sup> the fort which the Spaniards had-tried-to<sup>4</sup> construct. The city remained<sup>5</sup> under the rule of the good dukes of Lorraine, until Napoleon made-it<sup>6</sup> capital of the department of the Ombrone. After the fall of the emperor, it-returned<sup>7</sup> under the dominion of the dukes. In<sup>8</sup> 1860 it-was<sup>9</sup> the first Tuscan city that voted<sup>10</sup> the union of Italy under Victor Emmanuel II, the only honest king of whom history speaks.<sup>11</sup>

- <sup>1</sup> *Féce.* <sup>2</sup> *La cedette.* <sup>3</sup> *Vi fabbricò.* <sup>4</sup> *Avévano voluto.* <sup>5</sup> *Restò.* <sup>6</sup> *La fece.* <sup>7</sup> *Ritornò.* <sup>8</sup> See 38, b. <sup>9</sup> *Fu.* <sup>10</sup> *Votòsse.* <sup>11</sup> *Parli*, which should precede its subject.



## PERSONAL PRONOUNS.

46. Personal pronouns are divided into two classes, conjunctive and disjunctive: the conjunctive forms are those used as direct object of a verb, and as indirect object without a preposition; the disjunctive forms are those used as subject of a verb, and as object of a preposition.

Ex.: *ÈGLI* *ve* *lo dà per* *ME.*  
 He to you it gives for me.

## CONJUNCTIVE FORMS.

47. Conjunctive pronouns are always unaccented, and cannot be separated from the verb, which they sometimes follow but oftener precede, as will be explained in 48.

They are used only as direct object of a verb or as indirect object without a preposition. The forms are:—

*Mi*, me, to me.

*Ti*, thee, to thee.

*Ci*, us, to us.\*

*Vi*, you, to you.

*Si* (reflexive), himself, to himself; herself, to herself; itself, to itself.

*Si* (reflexive), themselves, to themselves.

*Lo*, him;\* *gli*, to him.†

*La*, her; *le*, to her.

*Li*, them (masc.); *loro*, to them.†

*Le*, them (fem.); *loro*, to them.

“It” must be rendered by a masculine or feminine form, according to the gender of the noun it represents. “It” representing not a word, but a whole clause, is *lo*.‡

Ex.: *Mi conosce*, he knows me; *ti do i libri*, I give thee the books.

*Ci vedete*, you see us; *vi dico tutto*, I tell you everything.

*Si veste*, he dresses himself; *si divertono*, they amuse themselves.

\* In old Italian and in poetry *ne* is often used for *ci*, and *il* for *lo*.

† In conversation *li* is often used for *gli*, and *gli* or *li* for *loro*.

‡ In certain idiomatic phrases *la* represents an indefinite object: as *pagarla cara*, “to pay dearly for it.”

• *Ecco l'oro: ve lo do*, here's the gold: I give it to you.

*Ecco la palla: la vèdo*, here's the ball: I see it.

• *Còme pott'eva sapère se io ventiva o no? — Lo ha indovinato.* —

"How could he tell whether I was coming or not?" "He guessed it."

(1) It will be seen that the third person (not reflexive) has different forms for the direct and the indirect object.

Ex.: *Lo trovdi*, I found him; *glí fèci un regalo*, I made him a present; *la láschia*, he leaves her; *le scríve*, he writes to her.

*Li cercáte*, you seek them (masc.); *le salutáte*, you greet them (fem.); *mandámo loro mille salúti*, we send them (masc. or fem.) a thousand greetings.

(2) The reflexive pronouns of the first and second persons are *mi*, *ci*; *ti*, *vi*. All plural reflexive pronouns are used also as reciprocal pronouns.

Ex.: *Mi difèndo*, I defend myself; *vi laváte*, you wash yourselves. *Si odiano*, they hate each other; *ci amámo*, we love one another.

(3) Another conjunctive pronoun is *ne*,\* "of it," "of them"; it corresponds also to "any," "some" when these words mean "any, some of it," "any, some of them." It is often used pleonastically in Italian.

Ex.: *Ne párla*, he speaks of it; *ne ho*, I have some.

*Non ne abbíamo*, we haven't any; *ne voléte*, do you want any?

*Tu ne approfitti di quèsta libertà*, you make good use of this liberty.

a. *Vi*, "you," and *ci* and *ne*, "us," are not distinguished by form nor position from the adverbs *vi*, *ci*, meaning "there," "here," "to it," "to them,"† and the adverb *ne*, "thence" (see 84):\* as *ci vado*, "I go there"; *vi è státo*, "he has been there."

---

\* Cf. French *en*.

† Cf. French *y*.

48. The conjunctive pronouns, except *lôro*, immediately precede the verb: as *mi vidète*, "you see me"; *non lo capîsco*, "I don't understand him."

But when the verb is an infinitive,\* a positive imperative,† a present participle, or a past participle used without an auxiliary, the pronoun follows the verb, and is written as one word with it: as *per vedérlo*, "to see him"; *di avérlo vedúto*, "to have seen him"; *vedételi*, "see them"; *vedéndoci*, "seeing us"; *avéndoci vedúto*, "having seen us"; *vedútoti*, "having seen thee." The addition of the pronoun does not change the place of the accent.

*Lôro* always follows the verb, but is never united to it: as *égli dà lôro del vîno*, "he gives them some wine"; *parlâte lôro*, "speak to them." ‡

a. When an infinitive depends immediately (without an intervening preposition) on another verb, a conjunctive pronoun belonging to the infinitive may go with either verb: as *pôssô vedérti* or *ti pôssô vedère*, "I can see thee." If both verbs have objects, the main verb regularly takes all conjunctive pronouns: as *ve lo sênto dire*, "I hear you say it."

If, however, the main verb is impersonal, it cannot take the object of the infinitive: as *bisógna fârlô*, "it is necessary to do it."

If the main verb is *fâre*, and the dependent infinitive has a direct object, the object of *fâre*, if it has one, must be indirect:

\* Not the infinitive used—with a negative—as imperative (see 72): as *non lo fâre*, "do not do it" (second pers. sing.).

† Not the negative imperative, nor the subjunctive used imperatively (see 77, a): as *non li guardâte*, "do not look at them"; *si régoli*, "let him moderate himself" (third pers. sing. pres. subj.).

‡ Students should follow strictly all of these rules; but they will find that the first is, in certain cases, not always observed by good Italian writers.

as *le fa avère la lèttera*, "he lets her have the letter"; *fàteli vedère a quel signòre*, "let that gentleman see them"; *dovrèi fàrglielo accettàre*, "I ought to make him accept it." This construction is generally used also with *lasciàre*, "to let," and often with *sentìre* and *udìre*, "to hear," and *vedere*, "to see."

b. When a conjunctive pronoun is joined to an infinitive, that infinitive drops its final *e*; if it ends in *-rre*, it drops *-re*: as *fàrlo* (*fàre*), "to do it"; *condúrvi* (*condúrre*), "to conduct you."

c. The final vowel of *mi*, *ti*, *si* is often, and that of *lo*, *la* is nearly always elided before a verb beginning with a vowel: as *t' amo*, "I love thee"; *l' ho visto*, "I've seen him."

d. All conjunctive pronouns except *gli* and *glie* (see 50) double their initial consonant when added to any form of a verb that ends in an accented vowel: as *dámmi* (imper. *da'* from *dàre*), "give me"; *dillo* (imper. *dì* from *dìre*), "say it"; *parleròlle* (antique, for *le parlerò*), "I shall speak to her."

e. Pronouns are joined to the interjection *ecco*, "see here," just as they are joined to the imperative of a verb: as *eccomi*, "here I am"; *eccotelo prònto*, "here it is ready for thee."

49. When two conjunctive pronouns come together, the indirect object precedes the direct: as *mi vi presènta*, "he introduces you to me"; *non vuol presentàrvimi*, "he will not introduce me to you"; *gli si presentò un uòmo*, "a man presented himself to him."

*Lóro*, however, always comes last: as *presentàtela lóro*, "introduce her to them."

*Ne* follows all forms except *lóro*: as *me ne dà*, "he gives me some"; *dátene lóro*, "give them some."

50. *Mi*, *ti*, *ci*, *vi*, *si* change their *i* to *e* before *lo*, *la*, *li*, *le*, *ne* (pronoun or adverb); and if the two words follow the verb, they are joined together: as *me lo dícce*, "he tells me

it"; *ve ne domándo*, "I ask you for some"; *mandátecelo*, "send it to us."\* *Gli* and *le* ("to her") become *glie* before *lo*, *la*, *li*, *le*, *ne*, and unite with them: as *gliéli mándo*, "I send them to him, to her"; *vôglio dârglielo*, "I wish to give it to him, to her."

### DISJUNCTIVE FORMS.

**51.** These forms are so called because they do not necessarily stand next to the verb.

Disjunctive pronouns have two cases, nominative and objective. The objective case is used only after prepositions (for exceptions, see **51, a, b**).

The disjunctive forms are these:—

<i>Io</i> , I; <i>me</i> , me.	<i>Tu</i> , thou; <i>te</i> , thee.
<i>Noi</i> , we; <i>noi</i> , us.	<i>Voi</i> , you; <i>voi</i> , you.
{ <i>Ègli</i> , <i>lui</i> , <i>esso</i> , he; <i>lui</i> , <i>esso</i> , him.	
{ <i>Èlla</i> , <i>lei</i> , <i>essa</i> , she; <i>lei</i> , <i>essa</i> , her.	
{ <i>Èssi</i> , <i>loro</i> ( <i>égli</i> no), they (masc.); <i>loro</i> , <i>èssi</i> , them (masc.).	
{ <i>Èsse</i> , <i>loro</i> ( <i>élle</i> no), they (fem.); <i>loro</i> , <i>èsse</i> , them (fem.).	

"It" must be rendered by a masculine or feminine form, according to the gender of the noun it represents. "It" as subject of an impersonal verb is regularly not expressed (see, however, **51, h**).

Ex.: *La càsa è grandissima, e intôrno ad èssa c'è un giardìno*, the house is very large, and around it there is a garden.

*Non è véro*, it isn't true; *piôve*, it rains.

(1) The various pronouns of the third person are used as follows. In speaking of things the different forms of *esso* are generally employed. In speaking of persons *egli*

\* In poetry *me lo*, *me ne*, etc., often become *mel*, *men*, etc.: as *tel dico*, "I tell thee so"; *sen tôrna*, "he returns thence." *Non lo* often = *no*.

(or *esso*), *ella* (or *essa*), pl. *essi*, *esse* are used for the nominative in written Italian, but in the spoken language they are replaced by *lui*, *lei*, *loro*; for the objective *lui*, *lei*, *loro* are used both in conversation and in writing. *Èglio* and *èllo* are antique forms.

Ex.: *Queste cose sono vere anch' esse*, these things are true, too.

*Ella parla con loro*, she speaks with them.

*Lui è giovane ma lei è vecchio*, she is young, but he is old.

*Vennero da noi anch' essi*, they came to us, too.

(2) As the Italian verb denotes by its endings the person and number of its subject, the personal pronouns of the nominative case are generally omitted. When expressed (for clearness, emphasis, or euphony), they may precede or follow the verb; in dependent clauses they nearly always follow. The subject of an interrogative verb usually comes after it, as in English.

Ex.: *Parliamo di lui*, we speak of him; *non vado*, I don't go.

*S' io fossi ricco come è egli*, if I were rich as he is.

(3) The disjunctive reflexive pronoun is *sè*, which is masculine and feminine, singular and plural.

Ex.: *Lo fecero da sè*, they did it by themselves.

a. Use the objective case: (1) When a pronoun of the third person is not subject of an expressed verb: as *beato lui*, "happy he!" *tanto i genitori che lui sono ricchi*, "his parents as well as he are rich." (2) When the pronoun stands in the predicate after the verb *essere*: as *credendo ch' io fossi te*, "thinking I was you." But "it is I," etc., are *sono io*, *sai tu*, *è lui*, *è lei*, *siamo noi*, *siate voi*, *sono loro*. (3) In the cases mentioned in §1, b.

*b.* (1) Clearness or emphasis occasionally requires the disjunctive pronoun instead of the conjunctive ; in this case the conjunctive form is often inserted also.

Ex. : *Parlo a voi signóre*, I speak to *you*, sir.  
*Mi piace anche a me*, it pleases me too.

(2) The disjunctive form must *always* be used when the verb has two direct or two indirect objects.

Ex. : *Vedo lui e lei*, I see him and her.  
*Lo do a mio padre e a te*, I give it to my father and to thee.

*c.* In speaking of a company, a class, or a people *nói altri*, *vói altri* (which are also written as one word) are used for *nói*, *vói*.

Ex. : *Nói altri italiani*, we Italians.  
*Vói altri pittóri*, you painters.

*d.* "With me," "with thee," "with himself, herself, themselves" are either *con me*, etc., or *meco*, *téco*, *séco*.

*e.* "Myself," "thyself," etc., used for emphasis with a pronoun or noun, are rendered by the adjective *stéssó*.

Ex. : *Nói stéssi la vedémmo*, we saw her ourselves.

*f.* "One another," "each other" is *l' un l' altro*.

Ex. : *Ci amiamo l' un l' altro*, we love one another.

*g.* In Florence *élla* is often shortened into *la*, which is used of both persons and things. In poetry *égli* becomes *éi*.

Ex. : *La non viène*, she doesn't come.

*Paré che la si pòssa tenér in máno*, it looks as if it might be held in the hand.

*h.* In impersonal phrases like "it is" the subject, "it," is occasionally expressed in Italian ; it is then translated *égli*, which in the spoken language is shortened into *gli*.

Ex. : *Gli è che*, it is because.

**52.** (1) The usual form of address in Italy is *Élla* \* (or *ella*), objective *Léi* (or *lei*); in conversation *Élla* is replaced by *Léi* (or *lei*). This word really means "it," and takes the verb in the third person; but an adjective or past participle modifying it agrees in gender with the person it represents. The plural of *Élla* is *Lóro* (or *loro*), which takes the verb in the third person plural.

Ex.: *Léi* or *Élla* è *tedesco*, *signóre*, you are German, sir.

*Signorina Néri, Léi* (or *Élla*) *fu lasciáta sóla*, Miss Neri, you were left alone.

*Sóno liétto che La stia bène* (see 51, g), I'm glad you are well.

*E Lóro, dóve vánno*, and you, where are you going?

*Lóro érano già partíti*, you were already gone.

*Signoríne, lóro sóno móltto studiósse*, young ladies, you are very studious.

Like other personal pronouns, *Élla* and *Lóro* are very often omitted in the nominative.

*Léi* è *tróppo gentile* or *è tróppo gentile*, you are too kind.

*Cóme stánno*, how do you (pl.) do?

The conjunctive forms of *Élla* are *La*, *Le* (or *la*, *le*), those of *Lóro* are *Li*, *Le*, *Lóro* (or *li*, *le*, *loro*); they occupy the same positions and undergo the same modifications as the corresponding pronouns of the third person (see 48, 49, 50). The reflexive pronoun of *Élla* and *Lóro* is *si*.

Ex.: *Le prométto di visitárla*, I promise (you) to visit you.

*Glíelo do*, I give it to you.

*La prègo d' accomodársi*, I beg you to seat yourself.

*Vidi Léi e il babbo*, I saw you and your father (see 51, b, 2).

*Dico lóro*, I tell you (pl.).

---

\* Standing for *Vóstra Signoría*, "your lordship" or "ladyship," or some other title of the feminine gender.



*Le cercáva*, I was looking for you (fem. pl.).

*Si divertono, signorini*, are you enjoying yourselves, young gentlemen?

The possessive of *Élla* is *Súo* (or *súo*). See 45.

Ex.: *La Súa gradíta lettera*, your welcome letter.

(2) *Vói* is the form of address oftenest found in books; it is used sometimes in conversation also, but only toward inferiors or toward equals with whom one is on familiar terms.\* It is employed for both plural and singular (like English "you"), although its verb is always plural; an adjective or participle modifying it agrees in gender and number with the person or persons it represents.

Ex.: *Vói qui, Piétro*, You here, Peter?

*Vói sítte alti tútti e due*, you are tall, both of you.

(3) In speaking to an intimate friend, a near relative, a child, or an animal the only form of address is *tu*. *Tu* is used also, like English "thou," in poetry and poetic prose. The plural of *tu* is *vói*.

Ex.: *Ti chidmo Enríco*, I call you Henry.

*Dóve stí tu*, where art thou?

*Vòglío vedérví, figliuóli míi*, my children, I wish to see you.

## EXERCISE II.

Tant' è<sup>1</sup>! dicéva<sup>2</sup> tra sè un giòrno Niccolíno; vòglío<sup>3</sup> vedére se quégli uccellíni son<sup>4</sup> nàti. Li guárdo<sup>5</sup> solaménte e riscéndo<sup>6</sup> súbito. — E Niccolíno s' arrámpica<sup>7</sup> su per quell' álbero, tentándo<sup>8</sup> d' arriváre al nido per levársi quélla curiosità. Ma sul più bèllo,<sup>9</sup> sènte<sup>10</sup> la vóce del bábbó il quále éra<sup>11</sup> lì prèssó nélla vióttola;

---

\* Though advocated by some of the best writers and speakers of Italian, the use of *vói* instead of *Léi* and *Lóro* has not become general. In Southern Italy, however, *vói* is the form popularly used.

vuòle<sup>12</sup> scènder lêsto per non fàrsi cògliere in fállo, ma nêlla fúria si smarrísce,<sup>13</sup> gli mánca<sup>14</sup> il sostégno, precipita<sup>15</sup> a tèrra, e cadêndo<sup>16</sup> si fa mále a<sup>17</sup> un piêde. Il dolóre lo fa<sup>18</sup> strillàre ; àlle grída còrrono<sup>19</sup> il bábbò e la màmma che lo raccòlgonò<sup>20</sup> esclamándo<sup>21</sup> : — Te l' abbiámò<sup>22</sup> détto le cênto vòlte che a' nìdi non ti dovévi<sup>23</sup> voltàr nemméno : êcco quel che succêde<sup>24</sup> ai curiòsi e a' disub-bidiènti. — E sòrte per lúi che lo sentírono,<sup>25</sup> perchè cosí potérono<sup>26</sup> prònti bagnàrgli il piêde coll' àcqua frédde, e dòpo avérglielo tenúto in quell' àcqua parécchio têmpo, potéron<sup>26</sup> fasciàrglielo strétto ; in quèsto môdo e dòpo quálche giòrno di ripòso asso-lúto, Niccolíno potè<sup>27</sup> ricominciàre a fàre quálche pássò per càsa.

- <sup>1</sup> I don't care. <sup>2</sup> Said. <sup>3</sup> I want. <sup>4</sup> Are. <sup>5</sup> I will look at. <sup>6</sup> Will come down again. <sup>7</sup> Climbs. <sup>8</sup> Trying. <sup>9</sup> *Sul più bello* = at the critical moment. <sup>10</sup> He hears. <sup>11</sup> Was. <sup>12</sup> He tries. <sup>13</sup> He gets confused. <sup>14</sup> Fails. <sup>15</sup> He tumbles. <sup>16</sup> Falling. <sup>17</sup> *Fa mále a* = he injures. <sup>18</sup> Makes. <sup>19</sup> Run. <sup>20</sup> Pick up. <sup>21</sup> Exclaiming. <sup>22</sup> We have. <sup>23</sup> *Non dovévi* = you mustn't. <sup>24</sup> Happens. <sup>25</sup> They heard. <sup>26</sup> They could. <sup>27</sup> Was able.

## EXERCISE 12.

[In this exercise CARLINO and GORO use *vói*; ARMANDO uses *vói* before GORO enters, *L'èi* afterwards.]

*Carlino.* Sir, we are<sup>1</sup> alone.

*Armándo.* So it seems<sup>2</sup> (*looking<sup>3</sup> around*).

*Carlino.* I repeat<sup>4</sup> to you that we are<sup>1</sup> alone (*louder*).

*Armándo.* But I tell<sup>5</sup> you that I admit-it.<sup>6</sup>

*Carlino.* It is<sup>7</sup> time to-raise<sup>8</sup> the mask —

*Armándo.* (Oh-my<sup>9</sup> ! this-fellow<sup>10</sup> has<sup>11</sup> recognized me.)

*Carlino.* And to<sup>15</sup> speak plainly.

*Armándo.* That is<sup>7</sup> what I wanted<sup>12</sup> to<sup>15</sup> do, but they interrupted<sup>13</sup> me all-the-time.<sup>14</sup>

*Carlino.* Do<sup>15</sup> you see<sup>16</sup> that grove over-there?

*Armándo.* I see<sup>17</sup> it.

*Carlino.* There nobody will-interrupt<sup>18</sup> you.

*Armándo.* Must<sup>19</sup> I go there to speak (*surprised*)?

*Carlino.* We shall-go<sup>20</sup> together.

*Enter*<sup>15</sup> GORO with two guns.

*Carlino.* (*Taking*<sup>21</sup> *one of them*) Take<sup>22</sup> the other.

*Armádo.* Thanks, I am<sup>23</sup> not<sup>24</sup> a<sup>25</sup> hunter.

*Goro.* Take<sup>22</sup> it, or-else<sup>26</sup> — (*brandishing*<sup>27</sup> *a thick club*).

*Armádo.* Willingly — to<sup>28</sup> satisfy you — excuse-me,<sup>29</sup> is<sup>30</sup> it loaded?

*Carlino.* To-be-brief,<sup>30</sup> you hate<sup>31</sup> me; you must<sup>32</sup> hate me. I hate<sup>33</sup> you. So<sup>34</sup> over-there in that grove — at eighty paces from-each-other<sup>34</sup> — bang!<sup>35</sup> Either you kill<sup>36</sup> me or I kill<sup>37</sup> you.

*Armádo.* But I have<sup>38</sup> n't<sup>39</sup> these sinister intentions, which-are<sup>40</sup> contrary to my principles.

*Carlino.* In that<sup>40</sup> case you will-permit<sup>41</sup> this-man-to-amuse-himself-by-shaking<sup>42</sup> the dust from your<sup>43</sup> black coat with that club.

*Armádo.* No, indeed; what-are-you-thinking-of<sup>44</sup>? It would-be<sup>45</sup> too much-trouble<sup>46</sup>! (*Goro brandishes*<sup>47</sup> *the club*) Be-easy<sup>48</sup> with the club.

*Carlino.* No? Then<sup>49</sup> Carolina must<sup>50</sup> be mine.

*Armádo.* You're-welcome-to-her.<sup>51</sup>

*Carlino.* In that<sup>52</sup> case we are friends; but be-off<sup>53</sup> from<sup>54</sup> here, do-you-understand<sup>55</sup>?

*Armádo.* (What a<sup>56</sup> nice way they have<sup>57</sup> in this country!)

<sup>1</sup> Sidmo. <sup>2</sup> Père. <sup>3</sup> Guardádo. <sup>4</sup> Ripèto. <sup>5</sup> Dico. <sup>6</sup> Ne convengo. <sup>7</sup> È.  
<sup>8</sup> To (di) raise to one's self. . . . <sup>9</sup> Ahì. <sup>10</sup> See 42, 2. <sup>11</sup> Ha. <sup>12</sup> Volèvo.  
<sup>13</sup> Hânno interròtto. <sup>14</sup> Always. <sup>15</sup> Omit. <sup>16</sup> Vedètte. <sup>17</sup> Vèdo. <sup>18</sup> Interromperà.  
<sup>19</sup> Dèvo. <sup>20</sup> Andrèmo. <sup>21</sup> Prendèdo. <sup>22</sup> Prendètte. <sup>23</sup> Sòno.  
<sup>24</sup> Non, "not," must precede the verb. <sup>25</sup> See 16, a. <sup>26</sup> Altrimènti.  
<sup>27</sup> Agitádo. <sup>28</sup> Per. <sup>29</sup> Scùsi. <sup>30</sup> Àlle còrte. <sup>31</sup> Odiàtte. <sup>32</sup> Dovètte.  
<sup>33</sup> Ódio. <sup>34</sup> The one from the other. <sup>35</sup> Brun. <sup>36</sup> Ammazzátte. <sup>37</sup> Ammazzo.  
<sup>38</sup> Ho. <sup>39</sup> Permetterètte. <sup>40</sup> That this man amuses (*divèrta*) himself to shake.  
<sup>41</sup> See 45, c. <sup>42</sup> Seems-it (*père*) to you? <sup>43</sup> Sarèbbe.  
<sup>44</sup> Incòmodo. <sup>45</sup> Ágita. <sup>46</sup> Stia buòno. <sup>47</sup> Dúnque. <sup>48</sup> Dève. <sup>49</sup> Take (*pigli*, subj.) her then (*pùre*) for-yourself. <sup>50</sup> Tal. <sup>51</sup> Vìa. <sup>52</sup> Di.  
<sup>53</sup> Intendètte. <sup>54</sup> 43, b. <sup>55</sup> Hânno.

## AUXILIARY VERBS. 1

**53.** The irregular verbs *essere*, "to be," and *avere*, "to have," are the ones most used as auxiliaries in Italian. They are conjugated as follows:—

**a. Infinitives:** *essere*, to be; *essere stato*, to have been.

**Participles:** *essendo*, being; *essendo stato*, having been; *stato*, been.

## Indicative.

PRESENT.	IMPERFECT.	PRETERITE.	FUTURE.
<i>Sono,</i>	<i>Èra,</i>	<i>Fui,</i>	<i>Sarò,</i>
<i>sai,</i>	<i>eri,</i>	<i>fuisti,</i>	<i>sarai,</i>
<i>è,</i>	<i>era,</i>	<i>fu,</i>	<i>sarà,</i>
<i>sidmo,</i>	<i>eravamo.</i>	<i>fummo.</i>	<i>saremo,</i>
<i>siete,</i>	<i>eravate.</i>	<i>fuiste,</i>	<i>sarete,</i>
<i>sòno.</i>	<i>erano.</i>	<i>furono.</i>	<i>saranno.</i>

PERFECT.	PLUPERFECT.	PRETERITE PERFECT.	FUTURE PERFECT.
<i>Sono stato (stata),</i>	<i>Èra stato (stata),</i>	<i>Fui stato (stata),</i>	<i>Sarò stato (stata),</i>
etc.	etc.	etc.	etc.
<i>sidmo statti (stâte),</i>	<i>eravamo statti (stâte),</i>	<i>fummo statti (stâte),</i>	<i>saremo statti (stâte),</i>
etc.	etc.	etc.	etc.

## Imperative.

## Subjunctive.

## Conditional.

	PRESENT.	IMPERFECT.	
	<i>Sia,</i>	<i>Fossi,</i>	<i>Sarei,</i>
<i>Sii or sia,</i>	<i>sia,</i>	<i>fossi,</i>	<i>saresti,</i>
	<i>sia,</i>	<i>fosse,</i>	<i>sarebbe.</i>
<i>sidmo,</i>	<i>sidmo,</i>	<i>fossimo,</i>	<i>saremmo,</i>
<i>siate.</i>	<i>siate,</i>	<i>fuiste,</i>	<i>saresti,</i>
	<i>siano or sieno.</i>	<i>fussero.</i>	<i>sarebbero.</i>
	PERFECT.	PLUPERFECT.	PERFECT.
	<i>Sia stato (stata),</i>	<i>Fossi stato (stata),</i>	<i>Sarei stato (stata),</i>
	etc.	etc.	etc.

b. **Infinitives:** *avére*, to have; *avére avúto*, to have had.

**Participles:** *avéndo*, having; *avéndo avúto*, having had; *avúto*, had

### Indicative.

PRESENT.	IMPERFECT.	PRETERITE.	FUTURE.
<i>Hò,</i> / <i>hàì,</i> <i>ha,</i> <i>abbidmo,</i> <i>avéte,</i> <i>hánno.</i>	<i>Avéva,</i> <i>avévi,</i> <i>avéva,</i> <i>avevamo,</i> <i>avevate,</i> <i>avévano.</i>	<i>Èbbi,</i> / <i>avésti,</i> <i>èbbe,</i> <i>avémmo.</i> <i>avéste,</i> <i>èbbero.</i>	<i>Avrò,</i> <i>avràì,</i> <i>avrà,</i> <i>avrémo,</i> <i>avréte,</i> <i>avránno.</i>
PERFECT.	PLUPERFECT.	PRETERITE PERFECT.	FUTURE PERFECT.
<i>Ho avúto,</i> etc.	<i>Avéva avúto,</i> etc.	<i>Èbbi avúto,</i> etc.	<i>Avrò avúto,</i> etc.

### Imperative.

### Subjunctive.

### Conditional.

	PRESENT.	IMPERFECT.	
<i>Ábbi,</i>	<i>Ábbia,</i>	<i>Avéssi,</i>	<i>Avrèi,</i>
	<i>ábbi</i> or <i>abbia,</i>	<i>avéssi,</i>	<i>avrèsti,</i>
	<i>abbia,</i>	<i>avésse,</i>	<i>avrèbbe,</i>
<i>abbidmo,</i>	<i>abbidmo,</i>	<i>avéssimo,</i>	<i>avrémmo,</i>
<i>abbidte.</i>	<i>abbidte.</i>	<i>avéste,</i>	<i>avrèste,</i>
	<i>abbiano.</i>	<i>avéssero.</i>	<i>avrèbbero.</i>
	PERFECT.	PLUPERFECT.	PERFECT.
	<i>Ábbia avúto,</i>	<i>Avéssi avúto,</i>	<i>Avrèi avúto,</i>
	etc.	etc.	etc.

54. (1) The auxiliary of the passive is *èssere*, "to be."

Ex.: *Sóno amato*, I am loved.

(2) The future ("shall," "will") and the conditional ("should," "would") are formed in Italian without any auxiliary.

Ex.: *Io andrò ed egli verrà*, I shall go, and he will come.

*Vorrèi vederlo*, I should like to see him.

(3) The auxiliary of the perfect, pluperfect, preterite perfect, and future perfect tenses is *avére*, "to have," if the verb be active and transitive. If the verb be passive, reflexive, or reciprocal, the auxiliary is always *essere*. If the verb be intransitive, the auxiliary is generally *essere*, but sometimes *avére*.\*

Ex.: *Ho parlato*, I have spoken.

*Avévano fatto quiste cose*, they had done these things.

*Mi sono fatto male*, I have hurt myself.

*Le donne si erano sbagliate*, the women had made a mistake.

*Sarò venuto*, I shall have come; *è neviciato*, it has snowed.

a. A past participle used with the auxiliary *essere* must agree with its subject in gender and number. But when the verb has a reflexive pronoun as *indirect* object, and some other word as *direct* object, the past participle may agree with the subject, or with the direct object, or remain invariable.

Ex.: *La ragazza è tornata*, the girl has returned.

*Le donne si sono disputate*, the women have disputed.

*La sorella si è fatta male*, our sister has hurt herself.

*Ci siamo fatti onore*, we have done ourselves credit.

*Ci siamo data (or dato) parola d'onore*, we have pledged our word of honor.

b. A past participle used with *avére* may or may not agree with its direct object, according to the choice of the writer. It usually does not agree when the object follows; and it nearly always does agree when the object is a personal pronoun preceding the verb.

Ex.: *La birra che aveva bevuto (or bevuta)*, the beer he had drunk.

*Ho veduto molte cose*, I have seen many things.

*Li ho trovati*, I have found them.

c. "To be," expressing a state or condition, is often rendered by *stare* (§2, 4), instead of *essere*. *Stare per* or *essere per* (followed by the infinitive) means "to be on the point of."

---

\* The use of *avére* with intransitive verbs must be learned by practice.

Ex.: *Sto bene*, I'm well; *cóme sta*, how are you?  
*Stáva per uscire*, I was just going out.

d. English "am" (or "was") + the present participle, when expressing duration, is rendered either by the simple present (or imperfect) or by the same tense of *stáre*\* + the present participle; when denoting futurity, it is translated by the future (or conditional), sometimes by the present (or imperfect).

Ex.: *Cammináva*, he was walking; *státe lavorando*, you are working.  
*Leggévano* or *stávano leggéndo*, they were reading.  
*Médito* or *sto meditándo*, I am meditating.  
*Dice che verrà* (or *viène*), he says he is coming.  
*Disse che verrebbe*, he said he was coming.

e. A verb with the auxiliary "used to" (or "would" = "used to") is translated either by the simple imperfect, or by the infinitive with *solére*, "to be accustomed" (92, 14).

Ex.: *Vi anddva* (or *soléva anddre*) *ógni séra*, he used to go there every evening.

f. *Venire*, "to come" (92, 166), and *rimanére*, "to remain" (92, 16), are sometimes used as auxiliaries in the simple tenses of the passive, instead of *éssere*. *Andáre*, "to go" (92, 1), is similarly used, but always implying duty or obligation.

Ex.: *Il ládro venne arrestáto*, the thief was arrested.  
*Rimási sorprésò*, I was surprised.  
*Il fucile non va toccáto*, the gun mustn't be touched.

g. The English auxiliary "do" is not expressed in Italian.

Ex.: *Non viène*, he does not come.

h. "To have a thing done" is *far fáre úna còsa* (92, 2).

Ex.: *Il re lo féce ammazzáre*, the king had him killed.

---

\* *Anddre* (92, 1) and *venire* (92, 166) are sometimes used instead of *stáre*.

**55.** The third person of the passive is very often replaced by the reflexive construction with *si*: as *si racconta*, "it is related"; *questo libro si legge*, "this book is read"; *la spada che mi si diède*, "the sword that was given me"; *quelle cose si facevano*, "those things were done." Many writers always make the verb agree with its subject in number; but in popular speech the verb is nearly always in the singular when its subject follows (as if *si* were the subject of the verb, and the original subject were the object): as *si vedono* (or *vede*) *moltissime cose*, "many things are seen"; *non si può* (or *pòssono*) *leggere questi libri*, "these books can't be read."

The construction with *si* is generally used also to render the English indefinite "they" followed by a verb: as *si dice*, "they say." In this sense it is employed with neuter as well as with transitive verbs: as *si va spesso*, "people often go."

See also **63, a.**

**56.** Following are synopses of the compound tenses of transitive, neuter, reflexive, and passive verbs. In the paradigms given henceforth these forms will be omitted.

*a.* Following is a synopsis of the compound tenses of *trovare*, "to find," and *venire*, "to come":—

*Avère trováto*, to have found.

*Avèndo trováto*, having found.

*Ho trováto*, I have found.

*Avéva trováto*, I had found.

*Èbbi trováto*, I had found.

*Avrò trováto*, I shall have found.

*Avrèi trováto*, I should have found.

*Abbia trováto*, I have found.

*Avéssi trováto*, I had found.

*Èssere venúto*, to have come.

*Essèndo venúto*, having come.

*Sòno venúto*, I have come.

*Èra venúto*, I had come.

*Fui venúto*, I had come.

*Sarò venúto*, I shall have come.

*Sarèi venúto*, I should have come.

*Sia venúto*, I have come.

*Fòssi venúto*, I had come.



b. Following is a synopsis of the compound tenses of *alzarsi* ("to raise one's self"), "to get up," and *andarsene*,\* "to go away."

<b>Infinitive</b> PERFECT:	<i>Essersi alzato,</i>	<i>Essersene andato,</i>
<b>Participle</b> PERFECT:	<i>Essendosi alzato,</i>	<i>Essendosiene andato,</i>
<b>Indicative</b> PERFECT:	<i>Mi sono alzato,</i>	<i>Me ne sono andato,</i>
PLUPERFECT:	<i>Mi era alzato,</i>	<i>Me ne era andato,</i>
PRETERITE PERFECT:	<i>Mi fui alzato,</i>	<i>Me ne fui andato,</i>
FUTURE PERFECT:	<i>Mi sarò alzato,</i>	<i>Me ne sarò andato,</i>
<b>Conditional</b> PERFECT:	<i>Mi sarei alzato,</i>	<i>Me ne sarei andato,</i>
<b>Subjunctive</b> PERFECT:	<i>Mi sia alzato,</i>	<i>Me ne sia andato,</i>
PLUPERFECT:	<i>Mi fossi alzato.</i>	<i>Me ne fossi andato.</i>

c. Following is a synopsis of the entire passive of *amare*, "to love": —

<b>Infinitive</b> PRESENT:	<i>Essere amato,</i> to be loved.
PERFECT:	<i>Essere stato amato,</i> to have been loved.
<b>Participle</b> PRESENT:	<i>Essendo amato,</i> being loved.
PERFECT:	<i>Essendo stato amato,</i> having been loved.
<b>Indicative</b> PRESENT:	<i>Sono amato,</i> I am loved.
PERFECT:	<i>Sono stato amato,</i> I have been loved.
IMPERFECT:	<i>Era amato,</i> I was loved.
PLUPERFECT:	<i>Era stato amato,</i> I had been loved.
PRETERITE:	<i>Fui amato,</i> I was loved.
PRETERITE PERFECT:	<i>Fui stato amato,</i> I had been loved.
FUTURE:	<i>Sarò amato,</i> I shall be loved.
FUTURE PERFECT:	<i>Sarò stato amato,</i> I shall have been loved.
<b>Conditional:</b>	<i>Sarei amato,</i> I should be loved.
PERFECT:	<i>Sarei stato amato,</i> I should have been loved.
<b>Imperative:</b>	<i>Sii amato,</i> be loved.
<b>Subjunctive</b> PRESENT:	<i>Sia amato,</i> I am loved.
PERFECT:	<i>Sia stato amato,</i> I have been loved.
IMPERFECT:	<i>Fossi amato,</i> I were loved.
PLUPERFECT:	<i>Fossi stato amato,</i> I had been loved.

---

\* *Andarsene* is composed of the verb *andare*, "to go," the reflexive *si*, and the adverb *ne*, "thence" (see 47, a).

**57.** "May," "might," "can," "could" are generally rendered by the proper tense of *potére*; \* "must," "ought," "shall" = "must," "should" = "ought," by *dovére*; \* "will" and "would" expressing volition, by *volére*.\*

Ex.: *Può essere vero*, it may be true.

*Non poteva parlare*, he couldn't speak.

*Dève pagarlo*, he must pay him, he shall pay him.

*Dovrebbe farlo*, he ought to do it, he should do it.

*Voglio sapere*, I will know.

*Non vorrèi andare*, I wouldn't go.

No preposition intervenes between these verbs and the dependent infinitive.

Ex.: *Hanno potuto dormire*, they have been able to sleep.

*Potrèmo partire*, we shall be able to start.

*Dovèmmo venire*, we had to come.

*Dovrete trovarla*, you will have to find her.

*Vorrà tornare*, he will want to return.

*Vorrèi sapere*, I should like to know.

These verbs are not defective, like the English modal auxiliaries; hence in Italian the tense is expressed by the auxiliary itself, and not by the dependent infinitive. To find the proper form of *potére*, *dovére*, or *volére*, replace "may," etc., by the correct tense of "to be able"; "must," etc., by "to be obliged"; "will," etc., by "to want" or "to like": as "I could have said it" = "I should have (*avrèi*) been able (*potùto*) to say it (*dirlo*)" = *avrèi potùto dirlo*.

Ex.: *Avrebbe dovuto tacere*, he ought to have kept still.

*Avrèmmo volùto restare*, we would have stayed.

---

\* See 92, 21, 8, 19. The auxiliary of these verbs is regularly *avère*; but some writers use with them the auxiliary that belongs to the dependent infinitive: as *hanno potuto venire* or *sono potuti venire*, "they have been able to come."

a. "Must" is also expressed by the impersonal verb *bisognare*, "to be necessary," followed by the infinitive or by *che*, "that," with the subjunctive. "To have to" is *avere da*.

Ex.: *Bisogna farlo*, it must be done.

*Bisogna che andiamo*, we must go.

*Ho da scrivere una lettera*, I have to write a letter.

b. "To be able" meaning "to know how" is *sapere* (see 92, 6). "Not to be able to help" doing a thing is *non poter a meno di non* (with infinitive) or *non poter fare a meno di* (with infinitive).

Ex.: *Non sèppe farlo*, he couldn't do it.

*Sa leggere e scrivere*, he can read and write.

*Non poté a meno di non ridere*, he couldn't help laughing.

### EXERCISE 13. ✓

Giorgétto è un bambino vispo, vispo. È sollécito; alle sètte è già leváto, ed è già andáto nel giardíno. È mággio, e il giardíno è tútto fioríto; ròse, gígli, viðle mándano<sup>1</sup> un odóre soáve. Giorgétto si strúgge<sup>2</sup> di cògliere i fióri; ma la mámma non vuòle<sup>3</sup>: la mámma lo ha lasciáto andár nel giardíno, a pátto che non cogliésse<sup>4</sup> i fióri. A un trátto Giorgétto véde<sup>5</sup> úna ròsa piú bèlla di tútte le áltre, non resiste<sup>6</sup> piú al desidèrio di pigliárla. La mámma non lo saprà,<sup>7</sup> non lo può<sup>8</sup> sapére, — díce<sup>9</sup> fra sè Giorgétto; e stènde<sup>10</sup> la máno al cespúglio, ed è per còglierla. Ma che è státo? Ritíra<sup>11</sup> lèsto la máno, e grída,<sup>12</sup> e piánge.<sup>13</sup> La ròsa ha le spíne: il súo gámbo nascósto tra bellíssime fòglie è tútto pièno di spíne; e le spíne gli háanno bucáto tútta la máno. La máno è sanguínosa; e Giorgétto piánge,<sup>13</sup> e la mámma óra si avvedrà<sup>14</sup> che il súo bambíno è disobbediènte.

<sup>1</sup> Send forth. <sup>2</sup> Is dying. <sup>3</sup> Is willing. <sup>4</sup> He should pick. <sup>5</sup> Sees. <sup>6</sup> Resists. <sup>7</sup> Will know. <sup>8</sup> Can. <sup>9</sup> Says. <sup>10</sup> Stretches out. <sup>11</sup> He draws back. <sup>12</sup> Screams. <sup>13</sup> Cries. <sup>14</sup> Will see.

## EXERCISE 14.

Silvio Pellico was<sup>1</sup> confined in prison ; and there, in the silence of his<sup>2</sup> dungeon, he found<sup>3</sup> a friend, a companion — a spider. Yes, a spider made<sup>4</sup> his web in a corner of the prison, and Silvio did<sup>5</sup> not-destroy-it<sup>6</sup> ; on-the-contrary,<sup>7</sup> he used-to-throw<sup>8</sup> him crumbs<sup>9</sup> of bread, and little by little he became-so-attached<sup>10</sup> to that spider, and the spider to him, that the creature used-to-come-down<sup>11</sup> from his web and go<sup>12</sup> to find Pellico,<sup>13</sup> and would-go<sup>13</sup> on his<sup>14</sup> hand and take<sup>15</sup> food<sup>9</sup> from his<sup>14</sup> fingers. One day the jailer removed<sup>16</sup> the unhappy Pellico. The prisoner thought-of<sup>17</sup> his spider, and said<sup>18</sup> : “ Now that I am-going-away,<sup>19</sup> he will-come-back<sup>20</sup> perhaps, and will-find<sup>21</sup> the prison empty ; or if there-is<sup>22</sup> somebody else here,<sup>23</sup> he may<sup>24</sup> be an enemy of spiders,<sup>9</sup> and tear down that beautiful web and crush the poor beast.”

<sup>1</sup> Preterite. <sup>2</sup> See 45, b. <sup>3</sup> Trovò. <sup>4</sup> Ficc. <sup>5</sup> See 54, g. <sup>6</sup> Not to-him it destroyed (*disficc*). <sup>7</sup> Anzi. <sup>8</sup> Buttava : see 54, e. <sup>9</sup> Def. art. <sup>10</sup> Tanto si affezionò. <sup>11</sup> Si movéva : see 54, e. <sup>12</sup> Andava. <sup>13</sup> See 13, e. <sup>14</sup> See 45, c. <sup>15</sup> Prendeva. <sup>16</sup> Mutò di stanza. <sup>17</sup> Pensava a. <sup>18</sup> Diceva. <sup>19</sup> See 54, d : me ne vado. <sup>20</sup> Ritornerà. <sup>21</sup> Troverà. <sup>22</sup> Vi sarà. <sup>23</sup> Omit. <sup>24</sup> Potrebbe : see 57.

## REGULAR AND IRREGULAR VERBS.

58. Italian verbs are divided into four conjugations, according as the infinitive ending is *-dre*, accented *-ère*, unaccented *-ere* (or *-rre*), or *-ire*. Regular verbs of the second and third conjugations are, however, inflected just alike.

a. The final *e* of the infinitive may be dropped before any word except one beginning with *s* impure.\*

\* Cf. 10, b; 14, b. Italians find it hard to pronounce three consecutive consonants of which the middle one is *s*.

## THE REGULAR VERB.

59. *Parlāre*, "to speak," will serve as a model for the first conjugation. All compound tenses are omitted (see 55):—

## Infinitive and Participles.

*Parlāre, parlādo, parlāto.*

## Indicative.

PRESENT.	IMPERFECT.	PRETERITE.	FUTURE.
<i>Parlo,</i>	<i>Parlāva,</i>	<i>Parlāi,</i>	<i>Parlerò,</i>
<i>parli,</i>	<i>parlāvi,</i>	<i>parlāsti,</i>	<i>parlerai,</i>
<i>parla,</i>	<i>parlāva,</i>	<i>parlò,</i>	<i>parlerà,</i>
<i>parliāmo,</i>	<i>parlavāmo,</i>	<i>parliāmmo,</i>	<i>parlerēmo,</i>
<i>parlāte,</i>	<i>parlavāte,</i>	<i>parlāste,</i>	<i>parlerēte,</i>
<i>parlano.</i>	<i>parlavano.</i>	<i>parlārono.</i>	<i>parlerānno.</i>

## Imperative.

## Subjunctive.

## Conditional

	PRESENT.	IMPERFECT.	
	<i>Parli,</i>	<i>Parlāssi,</i>	<i>Parlerēi,</i>
<i>Parla,</i>	<i>parli,</i>	<i>parlāssi,</i>	<i>parlerēsti,</i>
	<i>parli,</i>	<i>parlāsse,</i>	<i>parlerēbbe,</i>
<i>parliāmo,</i>	<i>parliāmo,</i>	<i>parlāssimo,</i>	<i>parlerēmmo,</i>
<i>parlāte.</i>	<i>parlāte,</i>	<i>parlāste,</i>	<i>parlerēste,</i>
	<i>parlino.</i>	<i>parlāssero.</i>	<i>parlerēbbero.</i>

a. Verbs whose infinitives end in *-care* or *-gare* insert *h* after the *c* or *g* in all forms where those letters precede *e* or *i*: as *pāghi* (*pagāre*), "let him pay"; *cercherò* (*cercāre*), "I shall search." Verbs in *-ciare* and *-giare* drop the *i* before *e* or *i*: as *mangi* (*mangiāre*), "thou eatest"; *comincerà*\* (*cominciāre*), "he will

---

\* Some writers retain the *i* before *e*: as *comincerà*.

begin." Verbs in *-chiare* and *-gliare* drop the *i* only before another *i*: as *picchi* (*picchiare*), "let him strike"; *pigli* (*pigliare*), "thou takest"; but *picchierà*, *pighierà*.

*b.* The verbs *giocare*, *rotare*, *sonare* change *o* of the stem into *uo* in all forms where that vowel is accented: as *suoni*, "let him play"; *giuocano*, "they play." *Rinnovare* and *tonare* generally make the same change.

**60.** Verbs of the second and third conjugations \* are inflected like *credere*, "to believe":—

### Infinitive and Participles.

*Credere*,      *credendo*,      *creduto*.

### Indicative.

PRESENT.	IMPERFECT.	PRETERITE.	FUTURE.
<i>Crédo</i> ,	<i>Credéva</i> ,	<i>Credéi</i> ( <i>credétti</i> ),	<i>Credèrò</i> ,
<i>crédi</i> ,	<i>credévi</i> ,	<i>credésti</i> ,	<i>credèrdi</i> ,
<i>crède</i> ,	<i>credéva</i> ,	<i>credè</i> ( <i>credétte</i> ),	<i>credèrà</i> ,
<i>credidmo</i> ,	<i>credévamo</i> ,	<i>credémmo</i> ,	<i>credèrémo</i> ,
<i>credéte</i> ,	<i>credévate</i> ,	<i>credéste</i> ,	<i>credèréte</i> ,
<i>credono</i> .	<i>credévano</i> .	<i>credèrono</i> ( <i>credéttero</i> ).	<i>credèránno</i> .

### Imperative.

### Subjunctive.

### Conditional

	PRESENT.	IMPERFECT.	
	<i>Créda</i> ,	<i>Credéssi</i> ,	<i>Credèrèi</i> ,
<i>Crédi</i> ,	<i>créda</i> ,	<i>credéssi</i> ,	<i>credèrèsti</i> ,
	<i>créda</i> ,	<i>credésse</i> ,	<i>credèrèbbe</i> ,
<i>credidmo</i> ,	<i>credidmo</i> ,	<i>credéssimo</i> ,	<i>credèrémmo</i> ,
<i>credéte</i> .	<i>credidte</i> ,	<i>credéste</i> ,	<i>credèréste</i> ,
	<i>credano</i> .	<i>credéssero</i> .	<i>credèrèbbero</i> .

---

\* Most grammars and dictionaries class these two together as the "second conjugation."

*Battere, compêtere, convêrgere, divêrgere, lûcere, mescere, miêtere, pâscere, prûdere, ripêtere, strîdere, têssere, tøndere*, and their compounds do not have in the preterite the forms in parentheses.

Verbs in *-cere* and *-gere* insert after the *c* or *g* an *i* before the *u* of the past participle, but not before the *o* or *a* of the singular or third person plural of the present indicative or subjunctive: as *mescere*; *mésco, mésci, mésce, mesciâmo, mescête, mescôno*; *mésca*, etc., *mescano*; *mesciûto*.

**61.** Most verbs of the fourth conjugation\* are inflected like *finire*, "to finish":—

#### Infinitive and Participles.

*Finire,*                      *finêndo,*                      *finito.*

#### Indicative.

PRESENT.	IMPERFECT.	PRETERITE.	FUTURE.
<i>Finisco,</i>	<i>Finiva,</i>	<i>Finii,</i>	<i>Finirò,</i>
<i>finisci,</i>	<i>finivi,</i>	<i>finisti,</i>	<i>finirai,</i>
<i>finisce,</i>	<i>finiva,</i>	<i>finì,</i>	<i>finirà,</i>
<i>finidmo,</i>	<i>finivâmo,</i>	<i>finimmo,</i>	<i>finiremo,</i>
<i>finite,</i>	<i>finivâte,</i>	<i>finiste,</i>	<i>finirête,</i>
<i>finiscono.</i>	<i>finivano.</i>	<i>finirono.</i>	<i>finiranno.</i>

#### Imperative.

#### Subjunctive.

#### Conditional.

	PRESENT.	IMPERFECT.	
	<i>Finisca,</i>	<i>Finissi,</i>	<i>Finirêi,</i>
<i>Finisci,</i>	<i>finisca,</i>	<i>finissi,</i>	<i>finirêsti,</i>
	<i>finisca,</i>	<i>finisse,</i>	<i>finirêbbe,</i>
<i>finidmo,</i>	<i>finidmo,</i>	<i>finissimo,</i>	<i>finirêmmo,</i>
<i>finite.</i>	<i>finidte,</i>	<i>finiste,</i>	<i>finirêste.</i>
	<i>finiscano.</i>	<i>finissero.</i>	<i>finirêbbero.</i>

Though inflected like *finire* in all other parts, *dormire*, *fuggire*,† *pentire*, *sentire*, *servire*, *vestire* are always, *abor-*

\* Most grammars and dictionaries call this the "third conjugation."

† *Fuggire* inserts no extra *i* (see last sentence of 60).

*rire*, *bolllre*, and verbs in *-vertire* are generally, and *assorbire*, *inghiottire*, *mentire*, *nutrire*, *tossire* are often, in the present indicative, imperative, and subjunctive, conjugated after the model below. *Partire* and *sortire* are, when transitive, inflected like *finire*, when intransitive, like *sentire*.\*

Indicative.	Imperative.	Subjunctive.
<i>Sento,</i>		<i>Senta,</i>
<i>senti,</i>	<i>Senti,</i>	<i>senta,</i>
<i>sente,</i>		<i>senta,</i>
<i>sentiâmo,</i>	<i>sentiâmo,</i>	<i>sentiâmo,</i>
<i>sentite,</i>	<i>sentite.</i>	<i>sentidte,</i>
<i>sentono.</i>		<i>séntano.</i>

**62.** The present participle of all verbs is invariable.

Ex.: *Stavâmo parlâdo*, we were speaking.

**63.** In all conjugations a form of the first person singular of the imperfect indicative ending in *o* instead of *a* is nearly always used in conversation, and occurs often in the works of modern authors: as *leggevo*, "I was reading."

*a.* In popular speech the first person plural of all tenses is generally replaced by the third person singular preceded by *si*: *nói âltri si crêde*, "we believe"; *nói si êra venûti*, "we had come"; *ci si decide*, "we decided (ourselves)."

*b.* Final *o* of the third person plural is frequently omitted: as *parlan di lui*, "they speak of him." Forms in *-ânno* sometimes drop *-no*: as *dirân tutto*, "they will tell everything."

*c.* The imperfect indicative endings *-avâmo*, *-avâte*, *-evâmo*, *-evâte*, *-ivâmo*, *-ivâte* are often pronounced *-âvamo*, *-âvate*, etc.

*d.* Occasionally, especially in poetry, *-at-* is omitted from the ending of the past participle of the first conjugation: *destâto* = *dêsto*.

---

\* Compounds are conjugated like their simple verbs.



## THE IRREGULAR VERB.

**64.** Certain parts of Italian irregular verbs are always regular: the example given below will show which they are: *Èssere* (see **53, a**) is an exception to all rules.

**65.** Many irregular verbs that belong or once belonged to the third conjugation have the infinitive contracted (*fàre* for *fàcere*, *dìre* for *dìcere*, *condúrre* for *condúcere*): in this case the future and conditional are formed from this contracted infinitive (*farò*, *dirèi*, *condurrèbbe*), while the present participle, the imperfect indicative and subjunctive, and certain persons of the present and preterite are formed from the uncontracted stem (*facèndo*, *dicéva*, *conducidmo*).

**66.** *Pórre* (for *pónere*), "to put," a verb of the third conjugation, will serve to show which are the regular and which the irregular parts of irregular verbs: the forms printed in italics are regular in all verbs except *dàre*, *dìre*, *èssere*, *fàre*, *stàre*; those in Roman type may be irregular.

## Infinitive and Participles.

*Pórre*,                      *ponèndo*,                      pósto.

## Indicative.

PRESENT.	IMPERFECT.	PRETERITE.	FUTURE.
Póngo,	<i>Ponéva</i> ,	Pósi,	Porrà,
póni,	<i>ponévi</i> ,	<i>ponésti</i> ,†	porrái,
póne,	<i>ponéva</i> ,	póse,	porrà,
poniámo,	<i>ponevámó</i> ,	<i>ponémmo</i> ,†	porrémo,
<i>ponéte</i> ,*	<i>poneváte</i> ,	<i>ponéste</i> ,†	porréte,
póngono.	<i>ponévano</i> .	pósero.	porráno.

\* See **66, 4**.

† See **66, 3**.

Imperative.	Subjunctive.		Conditional.
	PRESENT.	IMPERFECT.	
Póni,	Pónga,	<i>Ponéssi,*</i>	Porrêi,
	pónga,	<i>ponéssi,</i>	porrésti,
	pónga,	<i>ponésse,</i>	porrêbbe,
poniámo,	poniámo,	<i>ponéssimo,</i>	porrémmo,
ponéte.	poniáte,	<i>ponéste,</i>	porréste,
	póngano.	<i>ponéssero.</i>	porrêbbero.

It will be seen that the present participle, the imperfect indicative and subjunctive, and certain persons of the present and preterite indicative are always regular.

(1) *Dáre* and *stáre* have in the future and conditional *darò, darèi; starò, starèi*. Otherwise the only irregularity in the future and conditional is that they are contracted in many verbs even when the infinitive is uncontracted: as *vedére*, "to see," *vedrò; ventre*, "to come," *verrèi*.

(2) From the first person singular of the preterite the other irregular persons can be constructed, the third person singular by changing the ending *i* to *e*, the third person plural by adding *-ro* to the third person singular.†

(3) The *regular* persons of the preterite and the whole imperfect subjunctive are slightly irregular in *dáre* and *stáre*, which substitute *e* for *a* in those forms (*désti, démmo, déste, déssi; stésti, stémmo, stéste, stéssi*).

(4) *Díre* (for *dícere*) and *fáre* (for *fácere*) have *díte* and *fáte* in the second person plural of the present indicative.

a. Verbs whose stem ends in *l, n, or r* often drop final *e* or *i* in the singular of the present indicative and imperative: as *non vuol andáre*, "he will not go"; *vièn qui*, "come here." See also 63, a, b, c.

\* See 66, 3.

† This rule applies only to *irregular* preterites.

*b.* The three forms of the imperative are exactly like the corresponding persons of the present indicative, except in *avère*, *sapère*, and *volère*, where they follow the subjunctive (*abbì, abbiàmo, abbiate; sappi, sappiàmo, sappiate; vògli, vogliàmo, vogliate*), and in *andàre, dàre, dire, fàre*, and *stàre*, which have in the singular *va', dà', di', fa', stà'*.

*c.* The third person plural of the present indicative can always be constructed from the first person singular, from which can be formed also the whole present subjunctive except the first and second persons plural: these come from the first person plural of the present indicative. Exceptions to this rule are *andàre, avère, dàre, fàre, sapère*, and *stàre*, which have in the third person plural of the present indicative *vànno, hánno, dànno, fánno, sánno, stánno*; while *avère, dàre, sapère*, and *stàre* have in the present subjunctive *abbia, dia, sappia, stia*.

**67.** With the aid of the above notes any verb except *èssere* can be constructed from the infinitive, the participles (the present participle often being necessary to show the uncontracted form of the infinitive), the present indicative, and the first person singular of the preterite and future. A list of irregular verbs begins on page 88.

*a.* In general, compound verbs not differing in conjugation from their simple verbs will be omitted from this list. All compounds of *dàre* and *fàre* are accented on the same syllable as the simple verbs: as *fa*, "he does"; *disfà*, "he undoes."

The compounds of *stàre* demand special mention: *ristàre, soprastàre, sottostàre, sovrastàre* are inflected like *stàre* (*ristà soprastètti, sottostàno*); *distàre* has no present participle, is regular in the present of all moods (*disto*, etc.), but otherwise is inflected like *stàre* (*distètti*, etc.); *constàre, contrastàre, instàre, ostàre, prestàre, restàre, sostàre* are regular throughout (*cónsta, contrástano, instài, ostàrono, presterò, rèsti, sostàssi*).



Il bábbò va<sup>2</sup> a lavoráre la mattína prêsto ; la mámma è maláta, e quindi non lo pòssono<sup>4</sup> accompagnáre. L' áltra mattína però gli seguì brútta. Méntre andáva a scuòla, vide<sup>5</sup> avánti a sè un bambino piccìno, tútto vestíto bène, e che paréva sólo ; Enrico, sénza far tanti discórsi, arríva di diètro, gli piglia il cappèllo e gliélo bútta in úna fònte che èra lì vicína. Il pòvero bambino si mette a piángere, e Enríco cominciò a scappáre. Ma quèsta vòlta avéva fátto<sup>6</sup> mále i suòi cónti : il bambino non èra sólo, lo accompagnáva un bel can barbóne. I can barbóni háanno tanto intendíménto, che fánno<sup>6</sup> áltre còse ben più meraviglióse che andáre ad accompagnáre a scuòla un bambino. Il barbóne dúnque, cóme vide<sup>5</sup> il suo padroncínò assalíto, vía diètro ad Enríco che fuggíva ; in un áttimo lo raggiúnse,<sup>7</sup> e agguantátagli úna gámbe, lo badáva a mòrdere<sup>8</sup> ; Enríco urláva, ma il cáné non lo lasciò finchè un signóre, che avéva vísto<sup>5</sup> tútta la scéna, non lo minacciò col bastóne. Enríco ebbe stracciáti i calzóni, laceráta la cárne délla gámbe, e fu pòi puníto dal maèstro e daí genitóri ; ma da quel giòrno a quèsta pártè non dà<sup>1</sup> più nòia a nessúno, avèndo vedúto che un cáné stéssò gli avéva insegnáto cóme fósse mále molestáre gli áltri.

<sup>1</sup> From *dáre*, 92, 3. <sup>2</sup> *Andáre*, *andársene*, 92, 1. <sup>3</sup> *Dovére*, 92, 8. <sup>4</sup> *Potére*, 92, 21. <sup>5</sup> *Vedére*, 92, 10. <sup>6</sup> *Fáre*, 92, 2. <sup>7</sup> *Raggiúngere*, 92, 138.

<sup>8</sup> He kept biting him.

#### EXERCISE 16.

Have you ever observed what<sup>1</sup> happens when a pot of water boils at the fire? The steam of the water rises like so-much smoke, and remains attached to the lid that covers the pot ; when this steam has begun to cool, it becomes<sup>2</sup> water once-more,<sup>2</sup> and falls<sup>3</sup> down again<sup>3</sup> drop by drop. In-like-manner<sup>4</sup> it happens with<sup>5</sup> the vapors which the sun and the heat lift from the earth. The vapors rise, collect themselves on<sup>6</sup> high in little bubbles, and thus united they form clouds.<sup>7</sup> When these clouds are very-much<sup>8</sup> charged with<sup>9</sup> moisture, they resolve themselves into water ; and

the water, falling<sup>8</sup> down again<sup>8</sup> in drops where the wind carries it, forms rain.<sup>7</sup> So<sup>10</sup> rain<sup>7</sup> is-only<sup>11</sup> steam turned-back-into<sup>12</sup> water. The cloud, too,<sup>13</sup> is-only<sup>11</sup> a quantity of steam not-very<sup>14</sup> dense and not-very<sup>14</sup> high<sup>15</sup> in the air. This vapor, by<sup>16</sup> remaining low, prevents us sometimes from-seeing<sup>17</sup> objects<sup>7</sup> even at a<sup>16</sup> small distance from us.

<sup>1</sup> *Quello che.* <sup>2</sup> To become once more = *ritornare.* <sup>3</sup> To fall again = *ricadere.* <sup>4</sup> *Medesimamente.* <sup>5</sup> *Per.* <sup>6</sup> *In.* <sup>7</sup> See 13, b. <sup>8</sup> *Molto.* <sup>9</sup> *Di.* <sup>10</sup> *Dunque.* <sup>11</sup> *Non è altro che.* <sup>12</sup> *Tornato.* <sup>13</sup> *Più.* <sup>14</sup> *Poco.* <sup>15</sup> *Sollevato.* <sup>16</sup> *Omit.* <sup>17</sup> *Di vedere.*

## MOODS AND TENSES.

**69.** The English present participle used as subject, predicate nominative, or direct object of a verb must be rendered in Italian by the infinitive, nearly always preceded by the definite article.

Ex.: *Mi piace il viaggiare*, I like travelling.

*Rifarsela cogli animali è da sciocchi*, taking vengeance on animals is folly.

*La nostra prima cura fu il cercare una pensione*, our first care was hunting up a boarding-house.

*Odio lo studiare*, I hate studying.

**70.** The English present participle preceded by a preposition is translated as follows: (1) If the preposition is a necessary part of the thought, it is expressed in Italian, and the English present participle is rendered by the infinitive with the definite article. This article is, however, omitted (unless it would be used in English) after the prepositions *di*, "of"; *dopo di*, "after"; *invece di*, "instead of"; *prima di*, "before"; *senza*, "without."

Ex.: *Óltre il fare scarabocchi scrive male*, besides making blots he writes badly.

*Parldi contra il trarre útile di quella disgrazia*, I spoke against utilizing that misfortune.

*Il visio di fumare*, the habit of smoking.

*Ho l'abitudine di coricarmi tardi*, I am in the habit of going to bed late.

*Involce di dirmi tutto*, instead of telling me everything.

*Prima di morire*, before dying.

*Parliamo senza riflettere*, we speak without thinking.

(2) If in English the omission of the preposition, although it made the construction awkward, would not essentially change the meaning, the phrase is rendered in Italian by the present participle without any preposition.

Ex.: *Studiando si impara*, (through) studying we learn.

*Dovrei corrispondere alla sua cortesia ascoltandola*, I ought to acknowledge her courtesy (by) listening to her.

*Partendo incontrò un amico*, (on) going away he met a friend.

*Copiando non fa errori*, (in) copying he makes no mistakes.

(3) "To amuse one's self by . . ." and "to weary one's self by . . ." are *divertirsi a . . .* and *affannarsi a . . .* with the infinitive: as *si diverte a tirar sassi*, "he amuses himself throwing stones." Some other verbs often take this construction.

71. Following are some other rules for the use of the infinitive and participles.

a. When any verb is used as an auxiliary, the mood and tense are expressed in that verb, and not in the dependent infinitive (see 57).

Ex.: *Avrei potuto farlo*, I could have done it.

b. After *fare*, "to make" or "to have" (= "to cause"), *sentire* and *udire*, "to hear," and *vedere* "to see," the Italian present

infinitive is used to render an English past participle. After *lasciare*, "to let," and often after the preposition *da* an Italian active infinitive is used to translate a passive one in English.

Ex.: *Si fa capire*, he makes himself understood.

*Farò fare un paio di scarpe*, I shall have a pair of shoes made.

*L'ho sentito dire*, I have heard it said.

*Lo vide ammazzare*, he saw him killed.

*Si lascia ingannare*, he lets himself be deceived.

*Non c'è niente da fare*, there is nothing to be done.

c. The Italian past participle is inflected like any other adjective. The present participle is invariable. When in English the present participle is used adjectively, without any verbal force whatsoever, it is translated, not by the participle, but by a verbal adjective, which can be formed from almost any Italian verb by changing the infinitive ending into *-ante* for the first conjugation, and into *-ente* for the others. This adjective may be used substantively. Some writers have used it as a participle.

Ex.: *Questi vasi sono rotti*, these vases are broken.

*La donna sta cucendo*, the woman is sewing.

*Stavano parlando*, they were speaking.

*Un animale parlante*, a speaking animal.

*Acqua bollente*, boiling water; *due amanti*, two lovers.

d. A whole protasis is often expressed in Italian by a present participle, or by an infinitive with *a*.

Ex.: *Andandovi lo vedrebbe*, if he went there, he would see it.

*A bucarsi esce il sangue*, if you prick yourself, blood comes.

e. Writers sometimes use, instead of a clause in indirect discourse, an infinitive followed by the word that would have been subject of the clause.

Ex.: *Disse essere questo l'uomo che cercavamo*, he said this was the man we were looking for.



**72.** In negative commands the infinitive is always used instead of the second person singular of the imperative.

**Ex.:** *Trovalo*, find it; *non lo trovare*, do not find it.

**73.** When an action is represented as having taken place and still continuing, the English uses the perfect or pluperfect tense, the Italian the present or imperfect.

**Ex.:** *Studio l'italiano da otto mesi*, I have studied Italian for eight months.

**74.** In subordinate clauses referring to the future and introduced by a conjunction of time, where the present is often used in English, the future tense must be employed in Italian.

**Ex.:** *Quando vi andrò, glielo dirò*, when I go there, I'll tell him.

*a.* The future is often used, without any idea of future time, to express probability.

**Ex.:** *Sarà uscito*, he has probably gone out.

*Avrà molto denaro*, he probably has a great deal of money.

**75.** The difference between the imperfect and the preterite is this: the preterite is used of an event that occurred at a definite date in the past, the imperfect is used in a description or in speaking of an accessory circumstance or an habitual action in past time — the preterite is a narrative, the imperfect a descriptive tense. The preterite perfect is used (instead of the pluperfect) only after conjunctions meaning "as soon as" (*appena che, subito che, tosto che*), and sometimes after *dopo che*, "after."\*

---

\* It is used also in phrases like: *in cinque minuti ebbe finita la lettera*, "in five minutes he had the letter finished."

**Ex. :** *Entrò mentre dormivamo*, he came in while we slept.  
*Facevo così ogni mattina*, I did so every morning.  
*Lo fece l'anno scorso*, he did it last year.  
*Tosto che l'ebbe visto, uscì*, as soon as he had seen it, he went.

*a.* In conversation the perfect is often used instead of the preterite, when the event is not remote.

**Ex. :** *Vi sono andato ieri*, I went there yesterday.

**76.** The conditional, like the English "should" and "would," has two uses: in indirect discourse after a principal verb in a past tense it expresses the tense which in direct discourse would be future; \* in the conclusion of a conditional sentence it is used when the protasis is (or, if expressed, would be) in the imperfect subjunctive (see **77**).

**Ex. :** *Disse che lo farebbe*, he said he would do it.  
*Se fosse vero lo crederei*, if it were true, I should believe it.  
*Questa casa mi converrebbe*, this house would suit me.

**77.** When a condition is contrary to fact, (or consists of a more or less unlikely supposition referring to future time, †) the protasis is in the imperfect (or pluperfect) subjunctive, the apodosis in the conditional; ‡ otherwise both protasis and apodosis are in the indicative.

**Ex. :** *Se l'avessi te lo darei*, if I had it, I should give it thee.  
*Se fosse tornato l'avrei veduto*, if he had returned, I should have seen him.  
*Se venisse noi ce ne andremmo*, if he came, we should go.  
*Se vi andassi morrei*, if I should go there, I should die.

\* The perfect of the future or the conditional is sometimes used where the simple tense would be expected: *disse che non l'avrebbe fatto più*, "he said he would do it no more."

† Rendered in English by the imperfect, or by the auxiliary "should."

‡ The imperfect indicative is occasionally used to replace the imperfect or pluperfect subjunctive of the protasis and the conditional of the apodosis.

*Se non è véro è ben trováto*, if it isn't true, it's a good invention.  
*Se lo fécce sarà punito*, if he did it, he will be punished.

a. The missing persons of the imperative are supplied from the present subjunctive. The imperfect subjunctive is used to express a wish that is not likely to be realized.

Ex. : *Si accomodi*, be seated (sing.) ; *stiano zitti*, be quiet (plur.).  
*Sia pure*, be it so ; *vengano subito*, let them come at once.  
*Fosse pure*, would it were so !

b. When a relative clause restricts its antecedent to one of all its possible conditions or actions, the verb of that relative clause is in the subjunctive, — the present subjunctive if the verb on which it depends be present or future, the imperfect if it be past or conditional.

Ex. : *Non c'è animale più bellno d'un gatto giovane che faccia il chidso*, there is no animal prettier than a kitten that is at play.  
*Dove troverete un giovine che sposi voi*, where will you find a young man who will marry you ?  
*Vorrei vedere un bel quadro che non fosse antico*, I should like to see a fine picture that is not old.

c. The verb of a subordinate clause depending on an impersonal verb, on a superlative, or on one of the words "first," "last," and "only" is in the subjunctive. This rule does not apply to reflexive verbs, nor to affirmative phrases meaning "it is true" or "it is because."

Ex. : *Bisognò ch'io vi andassi*, I had to go there.  
*È giusto che siano puniti*, it's right they should be punished.  
*Il più bello ch'io conosca*, the finest that I know.  
*Si vede che non è così*, you see it isn't so.  
*È véro che ci sono stato*, it's true that I've been there.

d. The subjunctive is used after all conjunctions meaning "although," "as if," "unless," "provided that," "in order that," "in such a way that" (denoting purpose), "before," "however," "whenever," "wherever," "without."

**Ex. :** *Benchè stia nascosto, lo troverò, dovunque sia*, although he be hidden, I shall find him, wherever he is.

*Partirà a meno che egli non venga*, I shall go unless he comes.

*Lo fece perchè io venissi*, he did it that I might come.

*La divise in modo che le due parti fossero uguali*, he divided it in such a way that the two parts should be equal.

*Per quanto ricco egli sia*, however rich he may be.

*Aspetta finchè io torni*, wait until I return.

*e.* The subjunctive is used after the indefinite pronouns *qualche* *che*, *qualunque*, *chiunque*, *checcchè*, *per quanto*.

**Ex. :** *Chiunque venga*, whoever comes.

*Qualunque disgrazia che succeda*, whatever misfortune happens.

*Per quante volte ci vada*, however many times I go there.

*f.* The verb of an indirect question is nearly always in the subjunctive when it depends on a main verb either in a past tense or in the conditional.

**Ex. :** *Domandano se il re è morto*, they ask whether the king is dead.

*Domandò se il padre fosse uscito*, he asked whether his father was out.

*g.* In a clause dependent on a verb of saying the subjunctive is used if the main verb is negative, or interrogative, or in the conditional, or in a past tense. It is generally not used, however, after an affirmative verb in a past tense when the author himself wishes to imply that the indirect statement is true.

**Ex. :** *Dice che la cosa è chiarissima*, he says the thing is perfectly clear.

*Non dico che questo sia vero*, I don't say this is true.

*Dissero che lo zio fosse ammalato*, they said their uncle was ill.

*Gli dissi che mi chiamava Enrico*, I told him my name was Henry.

*h.* The subjunctive is used after verbs expressing causation, concession, desire, emotion, prevention, and uncertainty: *i.e.*, after verbs of bringing about; granting, permitting; commanding, hoping, requesting, wishing; fearing, regretting, rejoicing; forbidding, hindering; being ignorant, denying, disbelieving, doubting, expecting, pretending, supposing, suspecting, thinking. But *sperare*, "to hope," very often does not take the subjunctive.

**Ex.:** *Non so chi siano*, I don't know who they are.

*Vorrèi che non fòsse accaduto*, I wish it had not happened.

*Supponiamo che sia provato*, let us suppose that it is proved.

*Spero che verrà*, I hope he will come.

*i.* *Se*, "if," is occasionally omitted before an imperfect subjunctive; in this case the subject, if expressed, must follow the verb.

**Ex.:** *Sarèi felice venisse egli*, I should be happy, should he come.

### EXERCISE 17.

La màmma di Alfrédo avéva lasciáto un anèllo d'òro sul cassettóne. Alfrédo vòlle<sup>1</sup> mètterselo in díto. Che giudizio! pretèndere che l'anèllo délla màmma pòssa<sup>2</sup> stàre in un dítno d'un fanciúllò! Se lo míse<sup>3</sup> nel díto gròsso e pòi s'affacciò álla finèstra; l'anèllo cascò di sótto, e non se ne sèppe<sup>4</sup> più nùlla. La màmma cèrca l'anèllo, ma non c'èra più; cèrca di qui, di là, di sópra, cèrca per tútto, nè l'anèllo si può<sup>2</sup> trovàre. Allóra chiàma Alfrédo e gli dice<sup>5</sup>: — Bambíno, dímmi<sup>6</sup> la verità; hái présò<sup>7</sup> tu il mío anèllo? l'hái pèrso<sup>8</sup> tu? — Alfrédo, cattivo, dísse<sup>5</sup> di no. La màmma si ricordáva bène d'avérlo lasciáto nel vassoíno sul cassettóne. Non credéva Alfrédo capáce di dir le bugíe, quíndi sospettò che qualcúno l'avésse rubáto. Ci andáva in càsa<sup>9</sup> úna bambína, figliuòla d'un antico sùo servitóre, e il sospètto càdde<sup>10</sup> sópra quèsta pòvera creatúra. La màmma di Alfrédo non la vòlle<sup>1</sup> più in càsa; ma l'allontanò con bèlla manierà, e nessúno si avvide<sup>11</sup> di nùlla, perchè quèlla signóra èra buòna. Però la

bugia di Alfrédo féce<sup>12</sup> sì che súa mádre credésse ládra quélla pòvera bambína. Dío perdóni Alfrédo, Dío gl' ispiri di rimediáre a sì brútta azíone ; váda,<sup>13</sup> sì bútti ái piédi délla mámma, le raccònti tútto, e non commétta mái più di quéste azionáce.

<sup>1</sup> From *volére*, 92, 19.    <sup>2</sup> *Potére*, 92, 21.    <sup>3</sup> *Méttere*, 92, 73.    <sup>4</sup> *Sapére*, 92, 6.    <sup>5</sup> *Dire*, 92, 164.    <sup>6</sup> *Dire*: see 48, d.    <sup>7</sup> *Préndere*, 92, 87.    <sup>8</sup> *Pèrdere*, 92, 83.    <sup>9</sup> There used to come to the house.    <sup>10</sup> *Cadére*, 92, 7.    <sup>11</sup> *Avvedérsi*, 92, 10.    <sup>12</sup> *Fdre*, 92, 2.    <sup>13</sup> *Anddre*, 92, 1.

### EXERCISE 18.

We inhabit the earth ; but not all the earth has the same name everywhere : the earth is-divided<sup>1</sup> into five parts, and every part has its name. The five parts of the earth are-called<sup>1</sup> : Europe, Asia, Africa, America, Oceanica. Imagine you-cut-open<sup>2</sup> the earth in the middle and place<sup>3</sup> it on a table, in-such-a-way<sup>4</sup> that the inside shall-rest<sup>5</sup> on the table, and the outside shall-present<sup>5</sup> itself to your eyes. You will have two circles : in the circle that lies<sup>6</sup> at your right are<sup>7</sup> Europe, Asia, Africa, and a part of Oceanica ; in the circle that lies<sup>6</sup> on-the<sup>8</sup> left are<sup>7</sup> America and the other part of Oceanica. But the ancients did<sup>9</sup> not<sup>10</sup> believe that the earth was round, nor did<sup>9</sup> they know that its parts were five. They thought that the earth was flat and surrounded by the sea ; they knew, moreover,<sup>11</sup> only<sup>12</sup> three parts : Europe, Asia, Africa. They never<sup>13</sup> would have dreamed that the earth was round, and that on<sup>14</sup> the side opposite to the-one<sup>15</sup> which they inhabited there<sup>16</sup> was inhabited land. America was discovered 395 years ago by an Italian who was-called<sup>1</sup> Christopher Columbus. Christopher Columbus was-born<sup>17</sup> in a village near Genoa in 1447. His parents were poor ; his father earned hardly enough-to<sup>14</sup> support the family. However, by-dint<sup>18</sup> of sacrifices they had<sup>19</sup> him study ; and as<sup>20</sup> Christopher studied willingly, he grew up a fine<sup>21</sup> boy. When it was time<sup>22</sup> to-choose<sup>23</sup> a profession, he chose to-be-a<sup>24</sup> sailor. In<sup>8</sup> those times they believed that the world ended

after Africa; but Columbus, on-the-contrary,<sup>25</sup> persuaded himself that the world ought<sup>26</sup> not<sup>10</sup> to<sup>26</sup> end there, and that by continuing to sail, one<sup>1</sup> ought<sup>26</sup> to<sup>26</sup> turn and come-back to the same point.

- <sup>1</sup> See 55. <sup>2</sup> *Di aprire.* <sup>3</sup> *Di posdre.* <sup>4</sup> *In mdo.* <sup>5</sup> See 77, d. <sup>6</sup> Use *restdre.* <sup>7</sup> *C' è.* <sup>8</sup> *A.* <sup>9</sup> See 54, g. <sup>10</sup> *Non*, "not," must precede the verb. <sup>11</sup> *Poi.* <sup>12</sup> See 82. <sup>13</sup> See 83. <sup>14</sup> *Da.* <sup>15</sup> *Quella.* <sup>16</sup> *Vi.* <sup>17</sup> To be born = *ndscere*, 92, 77. <sup>18</sup> *A forza.* <sup>19</sup> Use *färe*, 92, 2. <sup>20</sup> *Perchè.* <sup>21</sup> *Bravo.* <sup>22</sup> Use def. article. <sup>23</sup> *Di scégliere.* <sup>24</sup> *Di färe il.* <sup>25</sup> *Invéce.* <sup>26</sup> See 57.

## CONJUNCTIONS, PREPOSITIONS, AND AD- VERBS.

### CONJUNCTIONS.

78. The principal conjunctions are:—

After, *dopo che.*

Also, *anche, pure.*

Although, *benchè, sebbène, non ostante che.*

And, *e.*

As, *cóme, quánto* (after *lánto*).

As (= since), *siccome, poichè.*

As fast as, *via via che.*

As if, *cóme se, quasi.*

As long as, *finchè.*

As well as, *cóme anco.*

Because, *perchè.*

Before, *prima che, avanti che.*

Both . . . and, *e . . . e.*

But, *ma.*

Either . . . or, *o . . . o.*

Even if, *anche se, ancorchè.*

Except that, *se non che.*

For, *chè.*

Granting that, *dato che.*

However (= nevertheless), *però, pure.*

However (before an adj.), *qualunque, per quánto.*

If, *se* (rarely *quándo*).

In case, *caso.*

In order that, *perchè, acciochè, affinché.*

Much less, *non che.*

Neither . . . nor, *nè . . . nè.*

Nevertheless, *tuttavia, nondiméno, però.*

Nor, *nè, nemméno, neppure.*

Nor . . . either, *nemméno, neppure.*

Nor even, *neanche, neppure.*

Not to say . . . but even, *non che . . . ma*

Or, *o, ovvéro, ossia.*

Or else, *ossia.*

Provided that, *purchè.*

Rather, *anzi.*

Since (temporal), *dacchè.*

Since (causal), *poichè, siccome.*

So, *dunque, adunque.*

So that (result), *di modo che, sicchè.*

So that (= in order that), *perchè.*

Than, *che.*

That, *che.*

That (= in order that), *perchè.*

Then, *dunque.*

Therefore, *dunque, però, perciò, adunque*  
(at the beginning of a clause).

Too, *pure, anche.*

Unless, *a meno che non, eccetto che non, senza che.*

Until, *finchè non.*

When, *quando.*

Whence, *donde.*

Where, *dove, ove, là dove.*

Wherever, *dovunque.*

Whether, *se.*

While, *mentre, mentre che.*

The final vowel of *anche, che, dove, neppure, and ove* is generally elided before *e* or *i*.

a. Of the above conjunctions *acciochè, affinché, a meno che non, ancorchè, avanti che, benchè, caso, come se, dato che, dovunque, eccetto che non, non ostante che, perchè* meaning "in order that," *per quanto, prima che, purchè, qualunque, quasi, sebbene, and senza che* are followed by the subjunctive. For the use of *che*, "that," with the subjunctive, see 77, c, g, h. *Come* is occasionally used for *come se*, and then it takes the subjunctive. *Finchè* when referring to the future sometimes has the sense of *finchè non*, and then it generally takes the subjunctive. *Se* is followed by the subjunctive when it introduces an indirect question or statement dependent on a verb in a past tense, or a condition contrary to fact. *Quando* meaning "if" sometimes takes the subjunctive when *se* would not. For examples, see 77, c, d, f, g, h.

b. *Che* cannot be omitted in Italian as "that" is in English: \* as *disse che fosse vero*, "he said it was true." *Se* can be omitted before an imperfect subjunctive: see 77, i.

---

\* It is omitted, however, in the following peculiarly Italian construction: *il ragazzo parèva fosse felice*, "the boy seemed to be happy"; that is, between a verb of seeming and the subjunctive dependent on it, when in English the construction would be a verb of seeming with a dependent infinitive. It is occasionally omitted also after verbs of wishing, hoping, and fearing: as *spéro mi scriva presto*, "I hope you will write to me soon."



c. *E* and *o* are often written *ed* and *od* before a vowel.

Ex.: *Mio padre ed io*, my father and I.

d. Between a verb of motion and an infinitive "and" is rendered by the preposition *a*.

Ex.: *Andrò a cercarlo*, I'll go and look for it.

e. When *anche*, "also" or "too," relates to a personal pronoun, the disjunctive form of that pronoun must follow *anche*, even if some form of the same pronoun has already been expressed.

Ex.: *Andremo anche noi*, we shall go too.

*Parte anch' egli*, he goes away too.

*Trovi anche lui*, I found him too.

*Vennero anch' essi*, they came too.

*Lo or me lo diede anche a me*, he gave it to me too.

*Ti piace anche a te*, you like it too.

## PREPOSITIONS.

79. The principal prepositions are:—

About (= approximately), *circa*.

About (= around), *intorno a*, *attorno a*.

Above, *sopra*.

According to, *secondo*.

After, *dopo*, *dopo di*.

Against, *contra*, *contro*.

Along, *lungo*.

Among, *fra*, *tra*.

Around, *intorno a*, *attorno a*.

As far as, *fino a*, *sino a*.

As for, *per*, *quanto a*, *in quanto a*.

As to, *rispetto a*.

At, *a*.

Because of, *per motivo di*.

Before (time), *prima di*, *innanzi*.

Before (place), *davanti a*, *innanzi*.

Behind, *dietro*.

Below, *sotto*.

Beside (place), *accanto a*.

Besides, beside (= in addition to).

*oltre*.

Between, *fra*, *tra*.

Beyond, *oltre*, *al di là di*.

By, *da*, *accanto a* (= beside).

By means of, *per mezzo di*.

During, *durante*.

Except, *tranne*, *eccetto*, *fubri di*.

For, *per*.

From, *da*, *fin da*.

In, *in*.

In front of, *davanti a*, *innanzi*.

Inside of, <i>déntro di</i> .	Round and round, <i>tórno tórno a</i> .
Instead of, <i>invéce di</i> .	Since, <i>da</i> .
In the midst of, <i>in mézzo a</i> .	To, <i>a</i> .
Into, <i>in</i> .	Toward, <i>vérso</i> .
Near, <i>vicino a</i> .	Through, <i>per</i> .
Of, <i>di</i> .	Under, <i>sótto</i> .
On, <i>su</i> (before a vowel, <i>sur</i> ), <i>sópra</i> .	Upon, <i>su</i> (before vowels, <i>sur</i> ), <i>sopra</i> .
On this side of, <i>al di qua di</i> .	Up to, <i>fino a, sino a</i> .
On to, <i>su</i> (before vowels, <i>sur</i> ), <i>sópra</i> .	With, <i>con</i> .
Opposite, <i>dirimpétto a</i> .	Within, <i>fra, tra</i> .
Out of, <i>da, di, fudri di</i> .	Within (= inside of), <i>déntro di</i> .
Outside of, <i>fudri di</i> .	Without, <i>sénza</i> .
Over, <i>sópra</i> .	Without (= outside of), <i>fudri di</i> .

When governing a personal pronoun *cóntra*, *diétro*, *dópo*, *sénza*, *sópra*, *sótto*, and often *fra* and *vérso* take *di* after them: as *sénza di me*, "without me"; *fra di lóro*, "among themselves." After *con*, *in*, *per*, a word beginning with *s* impure generally prefixes *i*\*: as *la stráda*, "the street"; *in istráda*, "in the street."

*a*. "To" before the name of a country, after a verb of motion, is *in*.

Ex.: *Andiámo in Fráncia*, let us go to France.

*b*. "To" before an infinitive is rendered in Italian as follows: (1) After the verbs *bastáre*, "suffice"; *bisognáre*, "need"; *convenire*, "suit"; *desideráre*, "desire"; *dovére*, "must," "ought"; *fáre*, "make"; *lasciáre*, "let"; *parére*, "seem"; *potére*, "can," "be able"; *sapére*, "know"; *sentire*, "hear," "feel"; *solére*, "be accustomed"; *udire*, "hear"; *vedére*, "see"; and *volére*, "wish," "to" before a following infinitive is omitted. It is omitted also in exclamations and indirect questions consisting only of an interrogative and an infinitive.

---

\* Cf. 58, *a*.

Ex.: *Dovrèi capire*, I ought to understand.

*Bisogna pensarci*, it is necessary to look out for it.

*Potrèmo venire*, we shall be able to come.

*Vorrèi sapere*, I should like to know.

*Non sa che fare nè dove avvolgersi*, he doesn't know what to do nor where to turn.

(2) After verbs of accustoming, attaining, beginning, compelling, continuing, hastening, helping, learning, preparing, teaching, and after verbs of motion, "to" before a following infinitive is *a*.

Ex.: *Andranno a vederla*, they will go to see her.

*Si affrettò a rispondere*, he hastened to reply.

(3) After all other verbs it is *di*; but "to" denoting purpose or result is *per*, and "to" indicating duty or necessity is *da*.

Ex.: *Gli dissi di scrivere*, I told him to write.

*Mi è grato di dirlo*, I am happy to say so.

*Legge per divertirsi*, he reads to amuse himself.

*È troppo basso per arrivarci*, he's too short to reach it.

*Ho qualcosa da fare*, I have something to do.

c. "By" denoting the agent is *da*.

Ex.: *Fu fatto da lui*, it was done by him.

d. "In" is *in*; but when expressing future time it is *fra*.

Ex.: *Fra tre giorni sarà finito*, in three days it will be finished.

e. "For" is *per*: as *l'ha fatto per me*, "he has done it for me." But in the sense of "since," in speaking of past time, "for" is *da*. "For," meaning "during," is omitted or translated *durante*. Sentences like "it is right for him to do it" must be translated by *che* with the subjunctive: *è giusto che lo faccia*.

Ex.: *Dimora da molti anni a Firenze*, he has lived for many years at Florence (see 73).

*Resterò cinque settimane*, I shall stay for five weeks.

*Piùve durante un mese*, it rained for a month.

*Bisogna ch'io vada*, it is necessary for me to go.

f. "From" is *da*; but before adverbs and sometimes after verbs of departing it is *di*. In speaking of time it is generally *fin da*.

Ex.: *È lontano di qua*, it is far from here.

*Esco di casa*, I go out of the house.

*Fin dal principio*, from the beginning.

g. *Da* has, in addition to the meanings "by," "from," "since," another sense hard to render in English: it may be translated "as," "characteristic of," "destined for," "such as to," or "suited to," according to the context. *Da* means also "at the house of" or "to the house of." *Da* corresponds to English "on" or "at" before the word "side," *parte*, used in its literal sense.

Ex.: *Prometto da uomo d'onore*, I promise as a man of honor.

*Il Salvini da Otello*, Salvini as Othello.

*Sarête tanto buono da ventre*, would you be so good as to come?

*Questo è da sciocchi*, this is acting like a fool.

*Il bambino ha un giudizio da grande*, the child has the judgment of a grown person.

*La sala da pranzo*, the dining-room.

*Una tazza da caffè*, a coffee-cup.

*L'ho veduto dal Signor Neri*, I saw him at Mr. Neri's.

*Viene da me*, he comes to my house.

*Da questa parte*, on this side.

h. *A* is often used before a noun—not indicating material (which is expressed by *di*) nor purpose (expressed by *da*)—that describes another noun, when in English these two substantives would form a compound word.

Ex.: *Una macchina a vapore*, a steam-engine.

*Una sedia a dondolo*, a rocking-chair.

*Uno sgabello a tre piedi*, a three-legged stool.

i. *Essere per* or *stare per* means "to be about to."

Ex.: *Stava per parlare*, he was on the point of speaking.

*j.* In some idiomatic phrases *di* is used in Italian when another preposition would be employed in English.

Ex.: *Di giorno, di notte*, by day, by night.

*Essere contento di una cosa*, to be satisfied with a thing.

*Vivo di pane*, I live on bread.

*Che factva delle forbici*, what did he do with the scissors?

### ADVERBS.

**80.** (1) Adverbs, unless they begin the clause, are generally placed immediately after the verb; *non*, however, always precedes the verb. When a compound tense is used, the adverb nearly always follows the past participle, but *già*, *mai*, and *sempre* usually precede it. See also **84**.

Ex.: *Non ci vado mai*, I never go there.

*Ho parlato spesso*, I have often spoken.

*Non ha sempre parlato così*, he hasn't always talked so.

(2) Adverbs are compared like adjectives (see **31**); but "better," "worse," "more," "less" are respectively *méglio*, *péggio*, *più*, *méno*.

**81.** "Yes" is *sì* or *già*: *sì* when it expresses real affirmation, *già* when it denotes passive assent. "No" is *no*. "Not" is *non*, after which a word beginning with *s* impure generally prefixes *i*. "Or not" at the end of a clause is *o no*.

Ex.: *Le piace questo tempo?* — *Sì*. — "Do you like this weather?"  
"Yes."

*Che tempaccio!* — *Già*. — "What nasty weather!" "Yes."

*Sta bene*, he is well; *non istà bene*, he isn't well.

*Sta vtro o no*, whether it be true or not.

*a.* "What?" meaning "what do you say?" is *cóme?* *Che* and the interjection *o* are often used to introduce questions.

Ex. : *O perchè non rispondete? — Côme? — Che sitte sordo, signóre?*  
— "Why don't you answer?" "What?" "Are you deaf, sir?"

*b.* "Very" is *mólto* (see, however, 35, *a*). Instead of using a word or suffix for "very," the Italians often repeat the emphasized adjective or adverb.

Ex. : *È mólto bello* or *è bellissimo*, it is very beautiful.  
*I suoi genitori erano pòveri pòveri*, his parents were very poor.

**82.** "Only" may be translated by *soltánto* or *solaménte*, or by the adjective *sólo*; and it is often rendered by *non . . . che*, with the whole verb intervening, and with the word modified by "only" immediately after *che*.

Ex. : *Non ne ho compráto che due*, I have bought only two of them.

**83.** "Never" is *non . . . mái*, with the inflected part of the verb intervening. "Just," as an adverb of time, is *or óra*. "Early" is *prèsto*, *per tēmpo*, or *di buon' óra*. "This morning" is *stamáne*; "last night" is *stanótte*. "The day after to-morròw" and "the day before yesterday" are respectively *domán l' áltro* and *ier l' áltro*. "A week, a fortnight from to-day" are *oggi a ótto*, *a quíndici*. "Ago" is translated by *fa*, which follows the substantive of time; if this substantive is plural, "ago" may be rendered also by *sóno* (*éranó* or *sardánno* if the date from which time is counted be past or future).

Ex. : *Non ti ha mái vedúto*, he has never seen thee.

*Son arrivúti or óra*, they have just arrived.

*Tre ánni fa*, three years ago; *quáttro giòrni sóno*, four days ago.

**Ex.:** *Lunedì erano due settimane*, two weeks ago Monday.  
*Domani saranno cinque mesi*, five months ago to-morrow.

**84.** "Here" and "there" when they denote a place already mentioned, and no particular stress is laid upon them, are *ci* and *vi*, which are often used in Italian when they would be superfluous in English; "there is," "there are," etc., are *c'è* or *vi è*, *ci sono* or *vi sono*, etc. (sometimes *vi ha*). *Ci*, *vi*, and also *ne*, "thence," occupy the same positions with regard to the verb, and undergo the same changes, as the pronouns *ci*, *vi*, *ne* (**48, 50**); they precede conjunctive pronouns beginning with *l* or *n*, and follow all others: *ce lo manda, ti ci mando*.

When emphasized, "here" is *qui* or *qua*, "there" indicating a place near the person addressed is *costì* or *costà*, and "there" denoting a point remote from both speaker and hearer is *lì* or *là*.

**Ex.:** *Carlo vi è tornato*, Charles has gone back there.

*Alla scuola non ci vado*, I don't go to school.

*Voi rimarrête costà, egli resterà laggiù, ed io non partirò di qui*, you will remain where you are, he will stay down there, and I shall not move from here.

**a.** "Here I am," "here it is," etc., are *ecco*, *eccomi*, *eccolo*, etc.

**85.** Most adverbs of manner are formed by adding *-mente* to the feminine singular of the corresponding adjective. Adjectives in *-le* and *-re* drop their final *e* in forming the adverb. See **35, a**.

**Ex.:** *Francò*, frank; *francamente*, frankly.

*Felice*, happy; *felicemente*, happily.

*Piacevole*, pleasant; *piacevolmente*, pleasantly.

**a.** "So" meaning "it" is translated *lo*: as *lo faccio*, "I do so"; *lo crede*, "he thinks so"; *lo dicono*, "they say so."

## EXERCISE 19.

Agostino è un goloso di prima ríga. Còme<sup>1</sup> vedéva déi confètti, úna chicca, délle frútta, súbito se le pigliáva e mangiáva sènza permèsso, ánche se non êrano sùe. Infino i suòi compágni di scuòla lo rimproverávano di quèsto viziaccio. La maèstra pensò di puníre Agostino. Un giòrno, quándo fu l' óra délla ricreazióne, tirò fuòri dálla súa cassétta de' confètti, e metténdoli nel panière d' Agostino, gli disse<sup>2</sup>: — Quèsti li porterái a càsa álla túa sorellína. — Agostino a vedér que' confètti féce<sup>6</sup> cèrti occhióni gróssi còme quèlli d' un bòve. Non istáva più in sè<sup>3</sup> dálla vòglia di mangiàre que' confètti. Êra tánto goloso, che se avéva qual-còsa di sùo non dáva nùlla a nessúno; êra tánto goloso, che avéva la sfacciatággine di mangiàre le còse dégli áltri; o figurátevi dúnque còme si struggéva di<sup>4</sup> mangiár que' confètti ch' êrano nel sùo panieríno. Finita la refezióne, i bambíni vánno<sup>5</sup> nel giardíno. Appéna Agostino véde che nêlla stánza dov' êrano i panieríni non c' êra nessúno, sparisce dal giardíno, e vía a pigliàre i confètti. Ma non ha finíto di buttár giò il primo, che<sup>1</sup> sênte un amáro, un sapóre cosí cattivo da non potér rêggere; spúta e rispúta, ma l' amáro non se ne andáva.<sup>5</sup> Êra curióso vedér Agostino disperáto per quel saporáccio. E i compágni chi dà un úscio, chi da un áltro, e chi dálla finêstra che dáva sul giardíno, stávano a vedérlo, e a ridere di quèsta cèlia che la maèstra avéva fáto<sup>6</sup> a quel goloso. Allóra la maèstra gli disse<sup>2</sup>: — Védi, Agostino; ho fáto<sup>6</sup> fáre quèsti confètti pièni d' assénzio appòsta per te; védi a che còsa pòrta l' ingordigia! Un áltro bambíno non ci sarèbbe rimásto a<sup>7</sup> quèsta cèlia. — Agostino si accòrse<sup>8</sup> che la signóra maèstra gli avéva fáta<sup>6</sup> quèsta cèlia per sùo bène, e che se non si correggéva diventáva lo zimbèllo di tútti.<sup>9</sup>

<sup>1</sup> When.   <sup>2</sup> Dire.   <sup>3</sup> He was beside himself.   <sup>4</sup> He was dying to.   <sup>5</sup> Andare, andarsene.   <sup>6</sup> Fare.   <sup>7</sup> Wouldn't have been taken in by.   <sup>8</sup> Accorgersi.   <sup>9</sup> See footnote (†) on p. 69.



## EXERCISE 20.

It is related that in by-gone<sup>1</sup> times a parrot escaped from a villa. This parrot had learned to say all-the-time<sup>2</sup>: "Who's-there<sup>3</sup>? who's-there<sup>3</sup>?" Having-fled<sup>4</sup> into a wood, it was flying from one tree to another without knowing where to go. A peasant, who by chance was hunting<sup>5</sup> in that place, eyed the parrot, and having never seen any<sup>18</sup> birds before<sup>6</sup> of this sort, he was<sup>7</sup> amazed at-it,<sup>8</sup> and took<sup>9</sup> all-possible<sup>10</sup> care to aim straight with his gun, so-as-to shoot-it<sup>11</sup> and carry it to show off as a rare thing. But while the peasant was aiming, the parrot, seeing<sup>4</sup> him, repeated his usual question: "Who's-there<sup>3</sup>? who's-there<sup>3</sup>?" The-peasant's-blood-froze-in-his-veins<sup>12</sup> at those words; and lowering<sup>4</sup> his gun, and taking-his-hat-from-his-head<sup>13</sup> he hastened to reply to him, dreadfully<sup>14</sup> mortified: "Excuse-me,<sup>15</sup> for-mercy's-sake,<sup>16</sup> I took<sup>17</sup> you for a bird!"

- <sup>1</sup> *Andditi*. <sup>2</sup> Always. <sup>3</sup> *Chi c'è*. <sup>4</sup> Past participle. <sup>5</sup> *A caccia*. <sup>6</sup> *Per innanzi*. <sup>7</sup> *Rimise*: see 54, f. <sup>8</sup> *Ne*. <sup>9</sup> Gave himself. <sup>10</sup> *Ogni*. <sup>11</sup> *Tirargli*. <sup>12</sup> To the peasant not remained blood in-him (*addosso*). <sup>13</sup> *Levatosi di capo il cappello*. <sup>14</sup> *Tutto*. <sup>15</sup> *La scusi*. <sup>16</sup> For charity. <sup>17</sup> Had taken. <sup>18</sup> Omit.

## INDEFINITE PRONOUNS.

**86.** "One," "people," "we," "you," "they," used in an indefinite sense, are rendered in Italian by the reflexive construction with *si* (see 55).

**Ex.:** *Si canta bene in Italia*, they sing well in Italy.

*Si fa così*, you do this way; *se ne parla*, people speak of it.

*Si fanno spesso queste cose*, one often does these things.

**87.** “**All**” as a substantive is *tutto* (*tutti*, etc.): as *tacé-vano tutti*, “all were silent.” The adjective “all,” “the whole” is *tutto* followed by the definite article: as *tutta la terra*, “the whole earth”; *tutto il giorno*, “all day”; *tutte le române son belle*, “all Roman ladies are beautiful.”

**88.** “**Any**,” when it really adds nothing to the sense, is omitted: as *non ha libri*, “he hasn’t (any) books”; *voléte vîno*, “do you want (any) wine?” When, however, this redundant “any” might be replaced by “any of the,” it is translated by the partitive genitive (see **12, a**): as *voléte del vîno*, “do you want any (of the) wine?”

“Any” used substantively in the sense of “any of it,” “any of them” is *ne* (see **47, 3**): as *non ne ho*, “I haven’t any”; *non ne ha più*, “he hasn’t any more”; *ne avéte*, “have you any?”

“Any” used adjectively and meaning “any whatsoever” is *qualúnque*: as *lo fa mēgljo di qualúnque áltra persóna*, “he does it better than any other person.”

**89.** “**Some**,” when it adds nothing to the sense, is omitted or rendered by the partitive genitive: as *voléte búrro* or *voléte del búrro*, “will you have some butter?”

“Some” meaning “some of it,” “some of them” is *ne*: as *ne ha*, “he has some.”

Otherwise “some” is *alcúno* or *qualche*. *Qualche* is always singular (even when the meaning is plural), and is never used substantively. Ex.: *alcúne persóne* or *qualche persóna*, “some persons”; *alcúni lo dícono*, “some say so.”

**90.** “Some . . . others,” “the one . . . the other,” “one . . . another” are translated by *chi . . . chi*, *áltri . . . áltri*, *l’ úno . . . l’ áltro*, or *alcúni . . . alcúni*.

*Alcuni* used in this way is always plural. A verb whose subject is *chi* or *altri* (used in this sense) is always singular; *altri* is not used after prepositions. But *l' uno* and *l' altro* can be used in any case or number.

Ex.: *Tutti, chi più tosto, e chi meno, morivano*, all died, some sooner, some later.

*Altri cade, altri fugge*, some fall, others flee.

*Gli uni son buoni, gli altri cattivi*, some are good, others bad.

91. Following is a list of some other indefinite pronouns and adjectives:—

Anybody, <i>qualcuno, qualcheduno, chichessa</i> , pronouns.	Neither, <i>non . . . l' uno nè l' altro, nè l' uno nè l' altro</i> , pron. or adj.
Any more, <i>più, ne . . . più</i> , pron.	No, <i>non . . . nessuno, non . . . alcuno</i> , adj.
Anything, <i>qualcheda</i> , pron.	Nobody, <i>non . . . nessuno</i> , pron.
Anything else, <i>altro</i> , pron.	No more, <i>non ne . . . più</i> , pron., <i>non . . . più</i> , adj.
Both, <i>tutti e due, l' uno e l' altro, ambedue</i> , pron. or adj.	None, <i>non ne . . .</i> , pron.
Certain, <i>certo</i> , adj.	Nothing, <i>non . . . niente, non . . . nulla</i> , pron.
Each, <i>ogni, ciascuno, ognuno</i> , adj.	Nothing else, <i>non . . . più niente, non . . . più nulla</i> , pron.
Either, <i>l' uno o l' altro</i> , pron. or adj.	Others, <i>altri</i> (see 91, d), pron.
Every, <i>ogni, ciascuno, ognuno, ciascheduno</i> , adj.	Several, <i>parecchi</i> (fem. <i>parecchie</i> ), pron. or adj.
Everybody, <i>tutti</i> (pl.), <i>ciascheduno, ciascuno, ognuno</i> , pron.	Somebody, <i>qualcheduno, qualcuno</i> , pron.
Everything, <i>tutto</i> , pron.	Something, <i>qualcheda</i> , pron.
Few, a few, <i>pochi</i> (pl.), pron. or adj.	Such, <i>tale</i> , adj.
However much, (or many), <i>per quanto (-ti)</i> , adj.	Such a, <i>un tale</i> , adj. (but also pron. in Ital., meaning "so-and-so").
Little, <i>poco</i> , pron. or adj.	Whatever, <i>qualunque</i> (invariable), adj.
Less, <i>meno</i> , pron. or adj.*	
Many, <i>molti</i> , pron. or adj.†	
More, <i>più</i> , pron. or adj.	
Much, <i>molto</i> , pron. or adj.	

\* "Less" = "smaller" is *più piccolo*.

† "A great many" is *molteissimi*.

a. The verb used with *nessúno*, *alcúno*, *niènte*, *núlla* (meaning "no," "nobody," "nothing") must be preceded by *non*, "not," unless this pronoun or adjective precedes the verb.

Ex.: *Non ho visto nessuno*, I have seen nobody.

*Nessun popolo lo possiede*, no people possesses it.

b. "Nothing" followed by an adjective is *niènte di*.

Ex.: *Non avete niente di buono*, you have nothing good.

c. *Ciascúno*, *ciaschedúno*, *ognúno*, *nessúno*, and *alcúno* when used adjectively are inflected like *úno* (see 14, 15).

d. *Altrúi*, "another," "others," "our neighbor," is invariable, and is not used as subject of a verb: as *con altrúi*, "with other people"; *chi ama altrúi ama sè stesso*, "he who loves his neighbor loves himself." The prepositions *di* and *a* are sometimes omitted before it: as *la mostro altrúi*, "I point her out to others"; *la voglia altrúi*, "the will of another."

## EXERCISE 21.

Per mutáre<sup>1</sup>! Riccárdo dice<sup>2</sup> mále di qualchedúno. Che brútto vízio è mái quéllo! A sentír Riccárdo, tútti son ásini, tútti sóno cattívi; di buòni e di brávi non c'è che lúi. Ma ora-mái ognúno ha conosciúto di che pánni vèste,<sup>3</sup> e nessúno gli créde più. Se fósse brávo e buòno, si guarderèbbe dal dir mále di quèsto e di quéllo, ánche quándo ne avèsse quálche ragióne. Figurátevi, dúnque, se può<sup>4</sup> èssere buòno e brávo lúi che dice mále di tútti! Sòrte, ripèto, che nessúno gli créde più, e quándo si sènte dir mále di qualchedúno, e si sa<sup>5</sup> che c'è Riccárdo di mèzzo,<sup>6</sup> ognúno si affrètta a rispóndere: Se l'ha détto<sup>2</sup> quel maldicènte di Riccárdo, non è véro núlla dicèrto.

<sup>1</sup> There he is at it again! <sup>2</sup> *Dire*. <sup>3</sup> What sort of a fellow he is. <sup>4</sup> *Potére*. <sup>5</sup> *Sapére*. <sup>6</sup> At the bottom of it.

## LIST OF IRREGULAR VERBS ARRANGED ACCORDING TO CONJUGATION.\*

**92.** This list contains no compound verbs except those which differ in conjugation from their simple verbs and those for which no simple verb exists in Italian. With every verb its irregular forms are given : in the same line with the infinitive are the present participle (if it be needed to show the original form of the infinitive), the first person singular of the preterite indicative, the past participle, and the first person singular of the future indicative (if the future be contracted) ; immediately below are the present indicative, the imperative, and the present subjunctive, if these parts be peculiar. For *dare* and *stare* the whole preterite and the first person singular of the imperfect subjunctive are given also. *Essere* is irregular throughout. *All tenses not mentioned are regular.* Note the following rules :—

*a.* If the present participle is given, the following forms, unless expressly mentioned, are to be constructed from its stem : all present and preterite forms with accented endings, and the whole imperfect indicative and subjunctive. If the present participle is not given, these forms, unless they be mentioned, are to be constructed from the stem of the infinitive.

*b.* Preterites in *-ai*, *-ei*, *-li*, and *-etti* (except *detti* and *stetti*) are regular throughout. In all *other* preterites the third person sin-

---

\* Reference to these tables is facilitated by an Alphabetical List of Irregular and Defective Verbs (see page 101). Students are advised not to learn forms in parentheses nor any verbs or forms marked *rare* or *poetical*.

gular can be formed from the first person by changing final *i* to *e*, and the third person plural by adding *-ro* to the third person singular.

*c.* If the future is not given, it is to be constructed from the infinitive. The conditional always has the same stem as the future.

*d.* The imperative, when not given, is like the corresponding forms of the present indicative.

### FIRST CONJUGATION.

#### 1. Andáre, *go*, andái, andáto; andrò (anderò).

PRES. IND.		IMPER.	PRES. SUBJ.	
Vádo <i>or</i> vò,	andiámo,	Va',	Váda,	andiámo,
vái,	andáte,	andiámo,	váda,	andiáte,
va,	vánno.	andáte.	váda,	vádano.

#### 2. Fáre, *do*, facêndo, féci, \* fáto; farò. *See 65.*

PRES. IND.		IMPER.	PRES. SUBJ.	
Fáccio <i>or</i> fò,	facciámo,	Fa',	Fáccia,	facciámo,
fái,†	fáte,	facciámo,	fáccia,	facciáte,
fa,†	fánno.	fáte.	fáccia,	fácciano.

#### 3. Dáre, *give*, dièdi *or* dêtti, dáto; darò. *Imp. subj. déssi.*

PRES. IND.	PRET. IND.	IMPER.	PRES. SUBJ.
Dò,	Dièdi <i>or</i> dêtti,		Día,
dái,	désti,	Da',	día,
dà,	diède <i>or</i> dêtte,‡		día,
diámo,	démmo,	diámo,	diámo,
dáte,	déste,	dáte.	diáte,
dánno.	dièdero <i>or</i> dêttero.‡		díano <i>or</i> díeno.

\* In poetry we sometimes find a preterite *fèi, fèsti, fè* or *fèo, fèmmo, fèste, fèrono* or *fènno*; and an imp. ind. *fèa*, etc.

† Also *fáci, fáce*.

‡ Also *diè, sing.; dièr* or *dièro* or *dièrono*, pl.

4. Stáre (67, a), *stand*, stétti, státo; starò. *Imp. subj. stéssi.*

PRES. IND.	PRET. IND.	IMPER.	PRES. SUBJ.
Stò,	Stétti,		Stía,
stái,	stésti,	Sta',	stía,
sta,	stétte,		stía,
stiámo,	stémmo,	stiámo,	stiámo,
státe,	stéste,	státe.	stiáte,
stánno.	stéttero.		stíano or stieno.

## SECOND CONJUGATION.

5. Avére, *have*, èbbi, avúto; avrò. *See 53, b.\**6. Sapére, *know*, sèppi, sapúto; saprò.

PRES. IND.	IMPER.	PRES. SUBJ.
Sò, sappiámo,	Sáppi,	Sáppia, sappiámo,
sái, sapéte,	sappiámo,	sáppia, sappiáte,
sa, sánno.	sappiáte.	sáppia, sappiano.

7. Cadére, *fall*, cáddi, cadúto; cadrò.

PRES. IND.	PRES. SUBJ.
Cádo (cággio), cadiámo (caggiámo),	Cáda (cággia), cadiámo (caggiámo),
cádi, cadéte,	cáda (cággia), cadiáte (caggiáte),
cáde, cádono (caggiono).	cáda (cággia), cádano (caggiano).

8. Dovére, *owe*, dovéi (dovétti), dovúto; dovrò. *Imperative lacking.*

PRES. IND.	PRES. SUBJ.
Dêvo (dêbbo or dêggio),	Dêbba (dêva or dêggia),
dêvi (dêbbi),	dêbba (dêva or dêggia),
dêve (dêbbe),	dêbba (dêva or dêggia),
dobbiámo (deggiamo),	dobbiámo,
dovéte,	dobbiáte,
dêvono (dêbbono or dêggiono).†	dêbbano (dêvano or dêggiano).

\* In poetry we find: *aggio, dabbo, or dio* for *ho*; *dve* for *ha*; *aggia* or *dia* for *abbia*; *êi* for *èbbi*; a future *arò*, etc., or *averò*, etc., and similar forms in the conditional.

† Also *dêo, dêi, dêe, dovêmo, dovête, dêono* or *dênno*.

9. Sedére, *sî, sedéi or sedètti, sedúto*.

PRES. IND.		PRES. SUBJ.	
Siêdo or sêggo,	sedíamo (seggiámo),	Siêda or sêgga,	sedíamo (seggiámo),
siêdi,	sedéte,	siêda or sêgga,	sedíate,
siêde,	siêdono or sêggonno.	siêda or sêgga,	siêdano or sêggano.

10. Vedére, *see, vidi, vedúto or vísto; vedrò. Provvedére has a future provvederò; prevedére has prevederò or prevedrò. All other compounds are like vedére.*

PRES. IND.		PRES. SUBJ.	
Vêdo (véggo or véggio),		Vêda (végga or véggia),	
védi,		vêda (végga or véggia),	
vêde,		vêda (végga or véggia),	
vediámo (veggiámo),		vediámo (veggiámo),	
vedéte,		vediáte (veggiáte),	
védono (véggono or véggiono).		védano (véggano or véggiano).	

11. Giacére, *lie, giáqui, giaciúto*.

PRES. IND.		PRES. SUBJ.	
Giáccio,	giacciámo,	Giáccia,	giacciámo,
giáci,	giacéte,	giáccia,	giacciáte,
giáce,	giácciono.	giáccia,	giácciano.

12. Piacére, *please: like giacére (11).*  
 13. Tacére, *be silent: like giacére (11).*  
 14. Solére, *be wont, sôlito. No pret., fut., cond., nor imperative.*

PRES. IND.		PRES. SUBJ.	
Sôglio,	sogliámo,	Sôglia,	sogliámo,
suðli,	soléte,	sôglia,	sogliáte,
suðle,	sôgliono.	sôglia,	sôgliano.

15. Dolére, *grieve, dôlsi, dolúto; dorro*.

PRES. IND.		PRES. SUBJ.	
Dôlgo (dôglio),	dogliámo,*	Dôlga (dôglia),	dogliámo,*
duðli,	doléte,	dôlga (dôglia),	dogliáte,
duðle,	dôlgonno (dôgliono).	dôlga (dôglia),	dôlgano (dôgliano).

---

\* Also *dolghiámo*.



16. Rimanére, *remain*, rimási, rimásto or rimáso; rimarrò.

PRES. IND.		PRES. SUBJ.	
Rimángo,	rimaniámo,*	Rimánga,	rimaniámo,*
rimáni,	rimanéte,	rimánga,	rimaniáte,
rimáne,	rimángono.	rimánga,	rimángano.

17. Tenére, *hold*, ténni, tenúto; terrò.

PRES. IND.		PRES. SUBJ.	
Têngo,	teniámo,*	Tênga,	teniámo,*
tiêni,	tenéte,	tênga,	teniáte,
tiêne,	têngono.	tênga,	têngano.

18. Valére, *be worth*, válsi, valúto or válso; varrò.

PRES. IND.		PRES. SUBJ.	
Válgo (váglio),	vagliámo,*	Válga (vágli),	vagliámo,*
váli,	valéte,	válga (vágli),	vagliáte,
vále,	válgono (vágliano).	válga (vágli),	válgano (vágliano).

19. Volére, *wish*, vòlli,† volúto; vorrò.

PRES. IND.		IMPER.	PRES. SUBJ.	
Vòglio,	vogliámo,	Vògli,	Vòglia,	vogliámo,
vuði,‡	voléte,	vogliámo,	vòglia,	vogliáte,
vuðle,	vògliono.	vogliáte.	vòglia,	vògliono.

20. Parére, *seem*, párvi, parúto or párso; parrò.

PRES. IND.		PRES. SUBJ.	
Páio,	paiámo or pariámo,	Páia,	paiámo or pariámo,
pári,	paréte,	páia,	paiáte,
páre,	páiono.	páia,	páiano.

21. Potére, *be able*, potéi, potúto; potrò.§ *No imperative.*

PRES. IND.		PRES. SUBJ.	
Pòsso,	possiámo,	Pòssa,	possiámo,
puði,	potéte,	pòssa,	possiáte,
puð,	pòssono.	pòssa,	pòssano.

\* Also *rimanghiámo; tenghiámo; valghidmo.*† Also *vòlsi.*‡ Also *vuðgli or vuðli.*§ In poetry we find a conditional *poria.*|| Also *puðle; pòssano.*

22. Persuadére, *persuade*, persuási, persuáso. *Pres.* persuádo, etc.  
 23. Calére, *matter*, cálse, calúto. *Impersonal. No fut., cond., nor imperative. Not modern.*

PRES. IND.

Cále.

PRES. SUBJ.

Cágliá.

## THIRD CONJUGATION.

*e.* All irregular verbs of the third conjugation are accented, in the singular and third person plural of the present indicative and subjunctive, on the same syllable as in the infinitive.

*f.* Verbs in *-cere* and *-gere* insert no *i* between the *c* or *g* and the *o* or *a* of the present indicative and subjunctive endings, except in the first person plural of both moods and the second person plural of the subjunctive.

*g.* See chapter on Pronunciation, 4, 8, *d.*

## PRESENT REGULAR.

24. Accëndere, *light*, accési, accéso.  
 25. Affliggere, *afflict*, afflíssi, afflítto.  
 26. Álgere, *be cold*, álsi. *Defective. Rare.*  
 27. Allúdere, *allude*, allúsi (alludéi), allúso.  
 28. Árdere, *burn*, ársi, árso.  
 29. Arrógere, *add*, arròsi, arròso or arròto. *Defective. Rare.*  
 30. Assídere, *besiege*, assísi, assíso. *Rare.*  
 31. Assòlvere, *absolve*, assolvètti or assolvéi or assòlsi, assòlto or assólúto. *So risòlvere (determine); for sòlvere, dissòlvere, and risòlvere (dissolve), see 107.*  
 32. Assòrbere, *absorb*, assòrsi (not in use), assòrto. *Rare.*  
 33. Avèllere, *uproot*, avúlse, avúlso. *Defective. Rare.*  
 34. Chiúdere, *shut*, chiúsi, chiúso. *So all verbs in -chiúdere or -clúdere. See, however, 4, 8, d.*  
 35. Còlere, *revere*, cólto or cúlto. *Defective. Rare.*  
 36. Connèttere, *connect*, connèssi (connettéi), connèssó (connettúto). *Rare.*  
 37. Conóscere, *know*, conóbbi, conosciúto.  
 38. Conquídere, *conquer*, conquísi, conquíso. *Rare.*

39. Consumere, *consume*, consúnsi, consúnto. *Rare*. Presumere  
has also presuméi.
40. Contúndere, *bruise*, contúsi, contúso.
41. Córriere, *run*, córsi, córso.
42. Créscere, *grow*, crébbi, cresciúto.
43. Cuócere, *cook*, cocêndo, còssi, còtto.
44. Decídere, *decide*, decisi, decíso.
45. Difêndere, *defend*, difési (difendéi), diféso.
46. Dirigere, *direct*, dirèssi, dirétto.
47. Discútere, *discuss*, discússi (discutéi), discússo.
48. Distínguere, *distinguish*, distínsi, distínto.
49. Dividere, *divide*, divisi, divíso.
50. Elídere, *elide*, elísi (elidéi), elíso.
51. Elúdere, *elude*, elúsi (eludéi or eludétti), elúso.
52. Êrgere, *erect*, êrsi, êrto. *Rare*.
53. Esígere, *exact*, esigéi (esigétti), esátto.
54. Esístere, *exist*, esistéi (esistétti), esistíto.
55. Espéllere, *expel*, espúlsi, espúlso. *Rare*.
56. Esplódere, *explode*, esplósi, esplóso.
57. Esprimere, *express*, esprèssi, espréssso. *So all other verbs in*  
*-primere. Prêmere and its compounds are regular.*
58. Fêndere, *split*, fendéi (fendétti or fèssi), fendúto or fèssso.
59. Fíggere (figere), *fix*, flissi (flisi), flisso (fliso) or lítto.
60. Fíngere, *feign*, flinsi, flinto.
61. Fóndere, *melt*, fúsi (fondéi), fúso (fondúto).
62. Frángere, *break*, fránsi, fránto.
63. Fríggere, *fry*, frissi, frítto.
64. Genuflèttere, *kneel*, genuflèssi, genuflèssso. *Rare*.
65. Intrídere, *dilute*, intrísi, intríso.
66. Intrúdere, *intrude*, intrúsi, intrúso.
67. Invádere, *invade*, invási, invásso.
68. Lêdere, *offend*, lèsi (*not in use*), lèso. *Rare*.
69. Lèggere, *read*, lèssi, lètto.
70. Lícere or lécere, *be lawful*, lécito or lítito. *Impersonal. De-*  
*fective. Poetical.*
71. Lúdere, *play*, lúsi, lúso. *Rare*.
72. Mèrgere, *plunge*, mèrsi, mèrso. *Rare*.
73. Mèttere, *put*, méssi or mísi, méssso.

74. Mòlcere, *soothe*, múlse. *Defective. Rare.*
75. Mórdere, *bite*, mòrsi, mórso.
76. Muòvere, *move*, movêndo, môssi, môsso.
77. Nâscere, *be born*, nâcqui, nâto.
78. Nascóndere, *hide*, nascósi, nascósto.
79. Neglîgere (see 5, 41), *neglect*, neglêssi, neglêtto.
80. Offêndere, *offend*, offêsi, offêso.
81. Ostêndere, *show. Defective. Rare.*
82. Percîpere, *perceive*, percêtto. *Defective. Rare.*
83. Pêrdere, *lose*, perdéi or perdêtti or pèrsi, perdúto or pèrso.
84. Piòvere, *rain*, piòvve (piovè), piovúto. *Impersonal.*
85. Pòrgere, *present*, pòrsi, pòrto.
86. Predilîgere, *prefer*, predilêssi, predilêtto.
87. Prêndere, *take*, prési, préso.
88. Protêggere, *protect*, protêssi, protêtto.
89. Râdere, *shave*, râsi (radéi), râso.
90. Redîmere, *redeem*, redênsi (rediméi), redênto.
91. Rêggere, *support*, rêssi, rêtto.
92. Rêndere, *render*, rési (rendéi or rendêtti), réso (rendúto).
93. Rîdere, *laugh*, rîsi, rîso.
94. Riflêttere, *reflect*, riflêttéi or riflêssi, riflêttúto or riflêssso. *Riflêttere, "to reflect light," is generally irregular; riflêttere, "to meditate," is usually regular.*
95. Rifûlgere, *shine*, rifûlsi. *Past part. lacking. Poetical.*
96. Rilúcere, *shine*, rilússi or rilucéi. *Past part. lacking.*
97. Rispóndere, *answer*, rispósi, rispósto.
98. Ródere, *gnaw*, rósi, róso.
99. Rómpere, *break*, rúppi, rótto.
100. Scéndere, *descend*, scési, scéso.
101. Scîndere, *sever*, scîndéi or scîssi, scîsso.
102. Sciòlvère, *breakfast*, sciòlsi or sciolvêtti, sciòlto. *Rare.*
103. Scòrgere, *perceive*, scòrsi, scòrto.
104. Scrîvere, *write*, scrîssi, scrîtto.
105. Scuòtere, *shake*, scotêndo, scòssi, scòsso.
106. Soffòlcere, *support*, soffólse, soffólto. *Defective. Rare.*
107. Sòlvère, *undo*, solvéi (solvêtti), solúto. *Poetical. So dissòlvère; for assòlvère and risòlvère (determine), see 31.*
108. Sòrgere, *rise*, sòrsi, sòrto.

109. Sospèndere, *suspend*, sospési, sospéso. *So appèndere, impèndere; pèndere is reg., dipèndere either reg. or irreg.*
110. Spàndere, *spill*, spandéi or spandètti, spánto.
111. Spàrgere, *scatter*, spàrsi, spàrso or spárto.
112. Spèndere, *spend*, spési, spéso.
113. Spèrgere, *disperse*, spèrsi, spèrso. *Rare.*
114. Spòrgere, *project*, spòrsi, spòrto.
115. Strúggere, *melt*, strússi, strútto.
116. Succèdere, *happen*, succèssi or succedéi, succèssso or succedúto. *So concèdere, which has also concedètti; cèdere and its other compounds are generally regular.*
117. Súggere, *suck*, suggéi or sússi. *Past part. lacking. Rare.*
118. Tèndere (*transitive*), *extend*, tési, téso. *The intrans. verb is reg., but has no past participle.*
119. Tèrgere, *wipe*, tèrsi or tergéi, tèrso. *Rare.*
120. Tòrcere, *twist*, tòrsi, tòrto.
121. Uccídere, *kill*, uccísi, uccíso.
122. Vín cere, *conquer*, vínsi, vínto.
123. Vív ere, *live*, víssi, vissúto or vivúto; viverò or vivrò.
124. Vòlgere, *turn*, vòlsi, vòlto.
125. Vòlv ere, *turn*, vòlsi, vòlto. *Rare. Devòlv ere has a past part. devolúto.*

## PRESENT IRREGULAR.

126. Êssere, *be*, fúí, státo; sarò. *See 53, a.\**
127. Bére or bévere, *drink*, bevèndo, bévvi (bevètti or bevéi), bevúto (beúto); berò or beverò.

## PRES. IND.

Bévo or béo, beviámo or beiámo,  
bévi or béi, bevéte or beéte,  
béve or béc, bévono or béono.

## PRES. SUBJ.

Béva or béa, beviámo or beiámo,  
béva or béa, beviáte or beiáte,  
béva or béa, bévano or béano.

\* In the imperfect indicative *èramo* is often used for *eravamo*. We find in poetry: *sète* for *siète*; *énno* or *en* for *sóno* (third plur.); *sie* for *sia*; *erámo*, *eráte* for *eravamo*, *eraváte*; *u* for *o* in the preterite and imperfect subjunctive; *fíro* for *fúrono*; *fia*, *fiano* or *fieno*, for *sarà*, *sardánno*; *fíra*, *fírano* for *sarèi*, *sarèbbe*, *sarèbbero*; *sèndo* for *essèndo*; *súto*, *essúto*, or *issúto* for *státo*.

128. Chiêdere, *ask*, chiêsi (chiési *or* chiedi), chiêsto.

## PRES. IND.

Chiêdo (chiêggo),\*  
chiêdi,  
chiêde,  
chiediâmo,  
chiedête,  
chiêdono (chiêggonno).\*

## PRES. SUBJ.

Chiêda (chiêgga),\*  
chiêda (chiêgga),  
chiêda (chiêgga),  
chiediâmo,  
chiediâte,  
chiêdano (chiêggano).\*

129. Condúrre, *conduct*, conducêndo, condússi, condótto; condurrò.

## PRES. IND.

Condúco,      conduciâmo,  
condúci,      conducête,  
condúce,      condúcono.

## PRES. SUBJ.

Condúca,      conduciâmo,  
condúca,      conduciâte,  
condúca,      condúcano.

130. Nuócere, *harm*, nocêndo, nòcqui, nociúto.

## PRES. IND.

Nuôco *or* nòccio, nociâmo,  
nuôci,      nocête,  
nuôce,      nuôcono *or* nòcciono.

## PRES. SUBJ.

Nuôca *or* nòccia, nociâmo,  
nuôca *or* nòccia, nociâte,  
nuôca *or* nòccia, nuôcano *or* nòcciano.

131. Pórre, *put*, ponêndo, pòsi, pósto; porrò.

## PRES. IND.

Póngo, poniâmo (ponghiâmo),  
póni,      ponête,  
póne,      póngono.

## PRES. SUBJ.

Póngga, poniâmo (ponghiâmo),  
póngga, poniâte,  
póngga, póngano.

132. Trárrre (tráere), *drag*, traêndo, trássi, tráttto; trarrò.

## PRES. IND.

Trággo,      traiâmo *or* traggiâmo,†  
trái (trággi),      traête,  
tráe (trágge),      trággono.

## PRES. SUBJ.

Trágga,      traiâmo *or* traggiâmo,†  
trágga,      traiâte,  
trágga,      trággono.

133. Vêllere (vêrre), *tear up*, vèlsi, vèlto; vellerò (verrò *or* velgerò).

Vêllere, *which is rare, has not all the forms given here; but its compound, svêllere, has them all.*

\* Also *chiêggio, chiêggiono, chiêggia, chiêggiano.*† Also *tragghidmo.*

## PRES. IND.

Vèllo *or* vèlgo, velliámo (velgiámo),  
 vèlli (vèlgi), vellète,  
 vèlle (vèlge), vèllono *or* vèlgono.

## PRES. SUBJ.

Vèlla *or* vèlga, velliámo (velgiámo),  
 vèlla *or* vèlga, velliáte (velgiáte),  
 vèlla *or* vèlga, vèllano *or* vèlgano.

134. Cògliere (còrre), *gather*, còlsi, còlto ; coglierò *or* corrò.

## PRES. IND.

Còlgo (còglio), cogliámo (colghiámo),  
 cògli, cogliète,  
 còglie, còlgono (cògliono).

## PRES. SUBJ.

Còlga (còglia), cogliámo (colghiámo),  
 còlga (còglia), cogliáte,  
 còlga (còglia), còlgano (cògliano).

135. Scégliere (scérre), *choose* : *like* cògliere (134).

136. Sciògliere (sciòrre), *untie* : *like* cògliere (134).

137. Tògliere (tòrre), *take* : *like* cògliere (134).

138. Giúngere (giúgnere), *to arrive*, giúnsi, giúnto ; giungerò (giugnerò).

## PRES. IND.

Giúngo (giúgno),  
 giúngi (giúgni),  
 giúnge (giúgne),  
 giungiámo (giugniámo),  
 giungète (giugnète),  
 giúngono (giúgnono).

## PRES. SUBJ.

Giúnga (giúgna),  
 giúnga (giúgna),  
 giúnga (giúgna),  
 giungiámo (giugniámo),  
 giungiáte (giugniáte),  
 giúngano (giúgnano).

139. Cíngere (cìgnere), *gird* : *like* giúngere (138).

140. Múgnere (múngere), *milk* : *like* giúngere (138).

141. Piángere (piágnere), *weep* : *like* giúngere (138).

142. Píngere (pígnere), *paint* : *like* giúngere (138).

143. Púngere (púgnere), *prick* : *like* giúngere (138).

144. Spègnere (spègnere), *extinguish* : *like* giúngere (138), *except that the forms with gn are as common as those with ng.*

145. Spíngere (spígnere), *push* : *like* giúngere (138).

146. Stríngere (strígnere), *bind* : *like* giúngere (138), *except that the past part. is strétto or strínto.*

147. Tíngere (tígnere), *dye* : *like* giúngere (138).

148. Úngere (úgnere), *anoint* : *like* giúngere (138).

## FOURTH CONJUGATION.

## PRESENT REGULAR.

149. *Apríre, open, aprii or apêrsi, apêrto. Pres. ápro, etc.*  
 150. *Copríre (cuopríre), cover, copríi or copêrsi, copêrto. Pres. cópro (cuópro), etc.*  
 151. *Offríre (offerire), offer, offríi (offerii) or offêrsi, offêrto. Pres. ôffro (offerisco), etc.*  
 152. *Soffríre, suffer: like offríre (151).*  
 153. *Convertíre, convert, convertíi or convêrsi, convertíto or convêrso. Pres. convêrto or convertísco, etc. All other verbs in -vertíre are reg.*  
 154. *Costruíre (construíre), construct, co(n)strússi or co(n)struíi, co(n)struíto or co(n)strútto. Pres. co(n)struísko, etc.*  
 155. *Digeríre, digest, digeríi, digeríto (digêsto). Pres. digerísco, etc.*  
 156. *Esauríre, exhaust, esauríi, esauríto or esáuisto. Pres. esau-rísco, etc.*  
 157. *Seppellíre or sepellíre, bury, sep(p)ellíi, seppellíto or sepólto. Pres. sep(p)ellísco, etc.*

## PRESENT IRREGULAR.

158. *Cucíre, sew, cucíi, cucíto. Pres. cúcio or cucísco. This verb inserts i before o and a, but not before e and i.*  
 159. *Sdrucíre or sdruscíre, rip: like cucíre (158).*  
 160. *Empíre or émpiere, fill, empiêndo, empií, empíto. All but the present from the stem of empiére. So compíre or cómpiere, which has also a past part. compíuto.*

## PRES. IND.

Émpio (empísco), empiámo,  
 émpi (empísci), empte,  
 émpie (empísce), émpiono (empíscono).

## PRES. SUBJ.

Émpia, empiámo,  
 émpia, empiáte,  
 émpia, émpiano.

161. *Moríre, die, moríi, mórto; morrò or morirò.*

## PRES. IND.

Muóio (muóro), moriámo or muoiámo,  
 muóri or muói, moríte,  
 muóre, muóiono (~~muórono~~).

## PRES. SUBJ.

Muóia (muóra), moriámo or muoiámo,  
 muóia (muóra), muoiáte,  
 muóia (muóra), muóiano (~~muórano~~).

\* In all forms where *no* occurs, it may be replaced by *o*.



162. Seguire, *follow*, seguiri, seguito. Pres. sêguo, etc. The verb is generally regular; but the *ê* may be changed to *iê* in all forms where it is accented. Proseguire has -sêguo or -seguisco.
163. Sparire, *disappear*, spariri or spârvi, sparito. Pres. (regular) sparisco, etc. Apparire has appârvi or -si or -li, apparito or appârso; comparire has compârvi or -si or -li, compârso; otherwise they are like sparire, but they have in the present the additional forms: -pâio, -pâre, -pâiono; -pâia, -pâiano.
164. Dire, *say*, dicêndo, dissi, détto; dirò. See 65.

PRES. IND.		IMPER.	PRES. SUBJ.	
Dico,	diciâmo,	Di',	Dica,	diciâmo,
dîci,	dîte,	diciâmo,	dîca,	diciâte,
dîce,	dîcono.	dîte.	dîca,	dîcano.

165. Salire, *ascend*, saliri or sâlsi, salito.

PRES. IND.		PRES. SUBJ.	
Sálgo (salísco),	saliâmo or sagliâmo,*	Sálga (salísca),	saliâmo or sagliâmo,*
sâli (salís-ci),	salîte,	sálga (salísca),	sagliâte,
sâle (salísce),	sálgono (salíscono).	sálga (salísca),	sálgano (salíscono).

166. Venire, *come*, vénni, venúto; verrò.

PRES. IND.		PRES. SUBJ.	
Vêngo (vêgno),	veniâmo,*	Vênga (vêgna),	veniâmo,*
viêni,	venîte,	vênga (vêgna),	veniâte,
viêne,	vêngono (vêgnono).	vênga (vêgna),	vêngano (vêgnano).

167. Udire, *hear*, udîi, udîto; udirò (udirò).

PRES. IND.		PRES. SUBJ.	
Ôdo,	udiâmo,	Ôda,	udiâmo,
ôdi,	udîte,	ôda,	udiâte,
ôde,	ôdono.	ôda,	ôdano.

168. Uscire (escire), *go out*, uscîi, uscîto.

PRES. IND.		PRES. SUBJ.	
Êsco,	uscîâmo,	Êsca,	uscîâmo,
êsci,	uscîte,	êsca,	uscîâte,
êsce,	êscono.	êsca,	êscano.

169. Orire, *be born*, ôrto. Defective. Rare.

---

\* Also *salghidmo*; *venghidmo*.

## ALPHABETICAL LIST OF IRREGULAR AND DEFECTIVE VERBS.

**93.** Every irregular verb in this list is followed by a number referring to the table of Irregular Verbs arranged according to Conjugation. Obsolete defective verbs that present no irregularity have not been mentioned.

*a.* Compound verbs have, in general, been excluded from this list, unless they differ in conjugation from the simple verbs from which they come (see **67**, *a*). The commonest prefixes are: *a-* (corresponding in meaning to the preposition *a*); *as-* (= Latin *abs-*); *co-, com-, con-, cor-* (= prep. *con*); *contra-* (= prep. *contra*); *de-, di-* (= Lat. *de-*); *dis-* (= Lat. *dis-*); *e-, es-* (= Lat. *ex*); *i-, im-, in-, ir-* (= prep. *in*); *o-* (= Lat. *ob*); *per-* (= prep. *per*); *pre-* (= Lat. *prae-*); *pro-* (= Lat. *pro-*); *r-, re-, ri-* (= Lat. *re-*); *s-* (= Lat. *ex-* or *dis-*); *so-, sos-, su-* (= Lat. *sub*); *sopra-, sopr-, sor-* (= prep. *sopra*); *sott-, sotto-* (= prep. *sotto*); *stra-* (= Lat. *extra*); *tra-* (= prep. *tra*). After several of these prefixes the initial consonant of the simple verb is generally found doubled: *a + cadere = accadere*. *S-* is sometimes combined with *con-, r-* with *a-* or *in-*: *scoscendere, raccogliere, rincorrere*.

Accadere, *see* cadere, 7.

Accendere, 24. ✓

Acciudere, *see* chiudere, 34.

Accorgere, *see* scorgere, 103. ✓

Acquisire *has only* acquisito.

Addurre, *see* condurre, 129.

Affliggere, 25.

Algere, 26.

Alludere, 27.

Ancidere, *see* uccidere, 121.

Andare, 1.

Annettere, *see* connettere, 36.

Anteporre, *see* porre, 131.

Antivedere, *p.p. only* antiveduto,  
*otherwise like* vedere, 10.

Apparire, *see* sparire, 163.

Appartenere, *see* tenere, 17.

Appendere, *see* sospendere, 109.

Aprire, 149. ✓

Ardere, 28.

- Arrôgere, 29.  
 Ascêndere, *see* scêndere, 100.  
 Ascîôlvere, *see* sciôlvere, 102.  
 Ascôndere, *see* nascôndere, 78.  
 Aspêrgere, *see* spêrgere, 113.  
 Assalîre, *see* salîre, 165.  
 Assîdere, 30.  
 Assîstere, *see* esîstere, 54.  
 Assôlvere, 31.  
 Assôrberere, 32.  
 Assûmere, *see* consûmere, 39.  
 Avêllere, 33.  
 Avêre, 5.  
 Bére, 127.  
 Bévere, *see* bére, 127.  
 Cadêre, 7.  
 Calêre, 23.  
 Cêdere, *generally reg., sometimes has pret. cêssi, p.p. cêssô.*  
 Chiêdere, 128. ✓  
 Chiûdere, 34. ✓  
 Cîgnere, *see* cîngere, 139.  
 Cîngere, 139.  
 Circoncîdere, *see* decîdere, 44.  
 Cogliere, 134. ✓  
 Coincîdere, *reg. verb, has no p.p.*  
 Còlere, 35.  
 Collûdere, *see* lûdere, 71.  
 Comparîre, *see* sparîre, 163.  
 Compêtere, *reg. verb, has no p.p.*  
 Còmpiere, *see* empîre, 160.  
 Copîre, *see* empîre, 160.  
 Comprîmere, *see* esprîmere, 57.  
 Concêdere, *see* succêdere, 116.  
 Conclûdere, *see* chiûdere, 34.  
 Concûtere, *see* discûtere, 47.  
 Condûrre, 129. —  
 Connêttiere, 36.  
 Conôscere, 37. ✓  
 Conquîdere, 38.  
 Consîstere, *see* esîstere, 54.  
 Constâre *is reg.*  
 Constrûire, *see* costrûire, 154.  
 Consûmere, 39.  
 Contêndere, *see* têndere, 118.  
 Contrastâre *is reg.*  
 Controvêrtere, *see* Vêrtere.  
 Contûndere, 40.  
 Convêrgere, *reg. verb, has no p.p.*  
 Convertîre, 153.  
 Copîre, 150.  
 Côrre, *see* cogliere, 134.  
 Córre, 41.  
 Corrispôndere, *see* rispôndere, 97.  
 Cospârgere, *see* spârgere, 111.  
 Cospêrgere, *see* spêrgere, 113.  
 Costrûire, 154.  
 Crêscere, 42.  
 Cucîre, 158.  
 Cuôcere, 43.  
 Cuoprîre, *see* copîre, 150.  
 Dâre, 3.  
 Decîdere, 44.  
 Dedûrre, *see* condûrre, 129.  
 Delinquere, *reg. verb, has no p.p., and its pret., delinquetti, is rare.*  
 Deprimere, *see* esprîmere, 57.  
 Desîstere, *see* esîstere, 54.  
 Devôlvere, *see* vôlvere, 125.  
 Difêndere, 45.  
 Digerîre, 155.  
 Dipêndere, *see* sospêndere, 109.  
 Dîre, 164.  
 Dirîgere, 46.  
 Dirîmere, *reg. verb, has no p.p.*  
 Discêndere, *see* scêndere, 100.  
 Discûtere, 47.  
 Dispêrgere, *see* spêrgere, 113.  
 Dissôlvere, *see* sôlvere, 107.  
 Dissuadêre, *see* persuadêre, 22.

- Distàre, *reg. in pres. of all moods, no pres. p., otherwise like stàre, 4.*  
 Distinguere, 48.  
 Distrúggere, *see strúggere, 115.*  
 Divedére, *has nothing but infin.*  
 Divèrgere, *reg. verb, has no p.p.*  
 Dividere, 49.  
 Dolére, 15.  
 Dovére, 8.  
 Elèggere, *see lèggere, 69.*  
 Elídere, 50.  
 Elúdere, 51.  
 Êmpiere, *see empíre, 160.*  
 Empíre, 160.  
 Êrgere, 52.  
 Erígere, *see dirígere, 46.*  
 Esauríre, 156.  
 Escíre, *see uscíre, 168.*  
 Esclúdere, *see chiúdere, 34.*  
 Esígere, 53.  
 Esímere, *reg. verb, has no p.p.*  
 Esístere, 54.  
 Espèllere, 55.  
 Esplòdere, 56.  
 Esprimere, 57.  
 Êssere, 126.  
 Estínguere, *see distinguere, 48.*  
 Evádere, *see invádere, 67.*  
 Fáre, 2.  
 Fèndere, 58.  
 Fèrvère, *reg. verb, has no p.p., and is rare except in the third pers. of the pres. and imp. ind.*  
 Fígere, *see figgere, 59.*  
 Fíggere, 59.  
 Fíngere, 60.  
 Fóndere, 61.  
 Frángere, 62.  
 Fríggere, 63.  
 Genuflettère, 64.  
 Giacére, 11.  
 Gíre, *defect. : pres. giámo, gíte; imp. gíva or glá, etc.; imper. giámo, gíte; pres. subj. giámo, giáte; no pres. p.; rest reg.*  
 Giúgnere, *see giángere, 138.*  
 Giúngere, 138.  
 Illúdere, *see lúdere, 71.*  
 Impèllere, *see espèllere, 55.*  
 Impèndere, *see sospèndere, 109.*  
 Imprímere, *see esprímere, 57.*  
 Incídere, *see decidere, 44.*  
 Inclúdere, *see chiúdere, 34.*  
 Incútere, *see discútere, 47.*  
 Indúrre, *see condúrre, 129.*  
 Insístere, *see esístere, 54.*  
 Instàre *is reg.*  
 Instruíre, *see costruítire, 154.*  
 Intèndere, *see tèndere, 118.*  
 Intercèdere, *see succèdere, 116.*  
 Intrídere, 65.  
 Introdúrre, *see condúrre, 129.*  
 Intrúdere, 66.  
 Invádere, 67.  
 Invalére, *p.p. only inválso, otherwise like valére, 18.*  
 Íre, *defect. : pres. íte; imp. íva, etc.; pret. ísti, íste, íro; fut. írémo, íréte, íránno; imper. íte; imp. subj. ísse, íste, íssero; p.p. íto.*  
 Istruíre, *see costruítire, 154.*  
 Lécere, *see lícere, 70.*  
 Lèdere, 68.  
 Lèggere, 69. ✕  
 Lícere, 70.  
 Lúcere, *reg. verb, has no p.p.*  
 Lúdere, 71.  
 Mantenére, *see tenére, 17.*  
 Mèrgere, 72.  
 Mèttère, 73. ✕

Mòlcere, 74.  
 Mòrdere, 75.  
 Moríre, 161.  
 Múgnere, 140.  
 Múngere, *see* múgnere, 140.  
 Muòvere, 76. ✕  
 Náscere, 77. ✕  
 Nascóndere, 78.  
 Neglígere, 79.  
 Nuócere, 130. ✕  
 Offèndere, 80. ✕  
 Offeríre, *see* offríre, 151.  
 Offríre, 151. ✕  
 Opprímere, *see* esprímere, 57.  
 Oríre, 169.  
 Ostáre *is reg.*  
 Ostèndere, 81.  
 Parére, 20. ✕  
 Percípere, 82.  
 Percuótere, *see* scuótere, 105.  
 Pèrdere, 83. ✕  
 Permanére, *see* rimanére, 16.  
 Persístere, *see* esístere, 54.  
 Persuadére, 22.  
 Piacére, 12. ✕  
 Piágnere, *see* piángere, 141.  
 Piángere, 141.  
 Pígnere, *see* píngere, 142.  
 Píngere, 142.  
 Piòvere, 84.  
 Pòrgere, 85.  
 Pórre, 131.  
 Pospórre, *see* pórre, 131.  
 Possedére, *see* sedére, 9.  
 Potére, 21.  
 Precídere, *see* decídere, 44.  
 Preclúdere, *see* chiúdere, 34.  
 Predillígere, 86.  
 Prémere *is reg.*  
 Prèndere, 87. ✕

Prestáre *is reg.*  
 Presúmere, *see* consúmere, 39.  
 Prevedére, *see* vedére, 10.  
 Prodúrre, *see* condúrre, 129.  
 Protèggere, 88.  
 Provvedére, *fut. ana cond. uncontracted, otherwise like vedére*, 10.  
 Prúdere, *reg. verb, has no p.p., and is used only in the third pers.*  
 Púgnere, *see* púngere, 143.  
 Púngere, 143.  
 Raccògliere, *see* cògliere, 134.  
 Rádere, 89.  
 Raggiúngere, *see* giúngere, 138.  
 Recídere, *see* decídere, 44.  
 Redímere, 90.  
 Règgere, 91.  
 Rèndere, 92.  
 Repèllere, *see* espèllere, 55.  
 Reprímere, *see* esprímere, 57.  
 Resístere, *see* esístere, 54.  
 Restáre *is reg.*  
 Rídere, 93. ✕  
 Ridúrre, *see* condúrre, 129.  
 Riflèttere, 94.  
 Rifúlgere, 95.  
 Rilúcere, 96.  
 Rimanére, 16. ✕  
 Risòlvare (*dissolve*), *see* sòlvare, 107.  
 Risòlvare (*determine*), *see* assòlvare, 31.  
 Rispóndere, 97.  
 Ristáre, *see* stáre, 4.  
 Risúmere, *see* consúmere, 39.  
 Ródere, 98.  
 Rómpere, 99.  
 Salfre, 165. ✕  
 Sapére, 6.  
 Scégliere, 135. ✕  
 Scéndere, 100.  
 Scérre, *see* sciégliere, 135.

- Scîndere, 101.  
 Sciôgliere, 136.  
 Sciôlvere, 102.  
 Sciôrre, *see* sciôgliere, 136.  
 Scommettere, *see* mëttere, 73.  
 Scoprire, *see* coprire, 150.  
 Scôrgere, 103. ✓  
 Scrivere, 104. ✓  
 Scuôtere, 105.  
 Sdrucire, 159.  
 Sdruscire, *see* sdrucire, 159.  
 Sedere, 9. ✗  
 Sedurre, *see* condurre, 129.  
 Seguire, 162.  
 Sepellire, *see* seppellire, 157.  
 Seppellire, 157.  
 Sofferire, *see* soffrire, 152.  
 Soffôlcere, 106.  
 Soffrire, 152.  
 Solere, 14. ✗  
 Sôlvere, 107.  
 Sopprimere, *see* esprimere, 57.  
 Soprastare, *see* stare, 4.  
 Sôrgere, 108.  
 Sospendere, 109.  
 Sostare *is reg.*  
 Sottostare, *see* stare, 4.  
 Sovrastare, *see* stare, 4.  
 Spandere, 110.  
 Spargere, 111.  
 Sparire, 163.  
 Spêgnere, 144.  
 Spêndere, 112.  
 Spêngere, *see* spêgnere, 144.  
 Spêrgere, 113.  
 Spîgnere, *see* spîngere, 145.  
 Spîngere, 145.  
 Spôrgere, 114.  
 Stare, 4.  
 Stridere, *reg. verb, has no p.p.*  
 Strignere, *see* stringere, 146.  
 Strîngere, 146.  
 Strâggere, 115.  
 Subire *is reg.: pres. subisco.*  
 Succedere, 116.  
 Sûggere, 117.  
 Sussistere, *see* esistere, 54.  
 Svêllere, *see* vèllere, 133.  
 Tacere, 13. ✗  
 Têndere (*trans.*), 118. [*p.p.*  
 Têndere (*intrans.*), *reg. verb, has no*  
 Tenere, 17.  
 Têrgere, 119.  
 Tîgnere, *see* tingere, 147.  
 Tîngere, 147.  
 Tôgliere, 137.  
 Tôrcere, 120.  
 Tôrre, *see* tôgliere, 137.  
 Tradurre, *see* condurre, 129.  
 Trâere, *see* trarre, 132. ✗  
 Transîgere, *see* esîgere, 53.  
 Trarre, 132.  
 Uccidere, 121.  
 Udire, 167.  
 Ûgnere, *see* ûngere, 148.  
 Ûngere, 148.  
 Uscire, 168. ✗  
 Valere, 18. ✗  
 Vedere, 10. ✗  
 Vêllere, 133.  
 Venire, 166. ✓  
 Vêrre, *see* vèllere, 133.  
 Vêrtere, *reg. verb, is used only in the*  
*pres. and imp.*  
 Vilipêndere, *see* sospêndere, 109.  
 Vincere, 122.  
 Vivere, 123.  
 Volere, 19.  
 Vôlgere, 124.  
 Vôlvere, 125.



## ITALIAN-ENGLISH VOCABULARY.

- A**, to, at, in.  
**A'**, **ái**, **al**, *etc.* = **a** + *art.*  
**Abbellíto**, beautified.  
**Accompagnáre**, accompany.  
**Accórgersi**, perceive.  
**Ácqua**, water.  
**Ad**, *see A*.  
**Affaociársi**, place one's self (*at a window*).  
**Affrettáre**, hasten.  
**Agguantáre**, seize.  
**Agostíno**, *Cus.*  
**Álbero**, tree.  
**Ále**, wing.  
**Alétta**, little wing.  
**Allettína**, little wing.  
**Alfrédo**, Alfred.  
**Allontanáre**, send off.  
**Allóra**, then.  
**Áltro**, other.  
**Amárc**, bitter.  
**Ánche**, also, even.  
**Andár**, *see Andáre*.  
**Andáre**, go, to go, going.  
**Andársene**, go away.  
**Andáto**, gone.  
**Anéllo**, ring.  
**Animále**, animal.  
**Animalíno**, little creature.  
**Antíco**, old.  
**Ápe**, bee.  
**Appéna**, hardly.
- Appósta**, on purpose.  
**Ária**, air.  
**Arriochíto**, enriched.  
**Arriváre**, arrive.  
**Arriváto**, having arrived.  
**Ásino**, ass.  
**Assálfre**, attack.  
**Assénsio**, wormwood.  
**Assolúto**, absolute.  
**Áttimo**, flash.  
**Avánti a**, in front of.  
**Avére**, have.  
**Avvedérsi di**, perceive.  
**Azionáccia**, *from Azíone*.  
**Azíone**, action.  
**Bábbo**, father, papa.  
**Badáre**, keep.  
**Bagnáre**, bathe.  
**Bambíno**, child.  
**Bárbáro**, barbarian.  
**Barbóne**, water-spaniel.  
**Baróne**, baron.  
**Bastóne**, stick.  
**Bel**, *see Bello*.  
**Bellíssimo**, very beautiful.  
**Bello**, beautiful, fine, kind.  
**Ben**, *see Bène*.  
**Bène**, well, nicely, much.  
**Bène**, good (*noun*).  
**Bócca**, mouth.  
**Bóve**, ox.  
**Brávo**, worthy.



- Brilláre**, shine.  
**Brútto**, ugly.  
**Bucáto**, pricked.  
**Bugía**, lie.  
**Búio**, dark.  
**Buôno**, good.  
**Buttáre**, throw. *Buttár giù* = swallow.  
**Cadére**, fall.  
**Calzóni**, trousers.  
**Can**, *see Cáne*.  
**Cáne**, dog.  
**Capáce**, capable.  
**Cápo**, head. *Da cápo, daccápo* = once more.  
**Cappéllo**, hat.  
**Carlomagno**, Charlemagne.  
**Cárne**, flesh.  
**Cása**, house, home.  
**Cascáre**, fall.  
**Cassétta**, drawer.  
**Cassettóne**, bureau.  
**Castéllo**, castle.  
**Cattívo**, bad, naughty.  
**Cèlia**, trick.  
**Cènto**, a hundred.  
**Cercáre**, search.  
**Cèrto**, certain, some.  
**Cespúglio**, bush.  
**Che**, who, which, that.  
**Che**, what. *Che còsa* = what.  
**Che**, that.  
**Che**, than.  
**Chi . . . chi**, one . . . another.  
**Chiamáre**, call.  
**Chícca**, sweetmeat.  
**Ci**, there.  
**Cínque**, five.
- Città**, city.  
**Cittadíno**, citizen.  
**Códa**, tail.  
**Cógli**, ool, *etc.* = *con* + *art.*  
**Cógliere**, catch, pick.  
**Cóllo**, neck.  
**Cóme**, as, like, how, when.  
**Cominciáre**, begin.  
**Comméttere**, commit.  
**Compáño**, companion.  
**Comúne**, town. *Comúni* = commons.  
**Con**, with.  
**Confètti**, candy.  
**Conóscere**, know, find out.  
**Cónte**, count.  
**Continovaménte**, continually.  
**Continuo**, continual.  
**Cónto**, count.  
**Còrpo**, body.  
**Corrèggersi**, reform.  
**Còsa**, thing. *Còsa pública* = government.  
**Così**, so, thus.  
**Creatúra**, creature.  
**Crédere**, believe.  
**Cúí**, whom, whose.  
**Curiosità**, curiosity.  
**Curíoso**, curious, funny.  
**Da**, by, from, as to. *Dalle parti* = at the sides.  
**Daccápo**, *see Cápo*.  
**Dái**, *dal, etc.* = *da* + *art.*  
**Dáre**, give, look.  
**De'**, *dégli, déi, del, etc.* = *di* + *a*.  
**Desidêrio**, desire.  
**Détto**, said, told.  
**Di**, of, than, to, with.

- Dicêrto**, surely.  
**Di diêtro**, from behind.  
**Diêci**, ten.  
**Diêtro**, behind, after. *Di diêtro* = from behind. *Diêtro a* = after.  
**Dintôrni**, neighborhood.  
**Dîo**, God.  
**Dîre**, say, speak.  
**Dirîtto**, right.  
**Discôrso**, talk.  
**Disobbediênte**, disobedient.  
**Disperâto**, desperate.  
**Distânza**, distance.  
**Distrúggere**, destroy.  
**Disubbidîênte**, disobedient.  
**Ditîno**, from Dîto.  
**Dîto**, finger. *Dîto grôssô* = thumb.  
**Diventâre**, become.  
**Dôdiçi**, twelve.  
**Dolôre**, pain.  
**Dôpo**, after.  
**Dôve**, where.  
**Dovére**, ought, must.  
**Dûe**, two.  
**Dúnque**, therefore.  
**Durânte**, during.  
**E**, and.  
**Ècco**, this is.  
**Ed**, and.  
**Enríco**, Henry.  
**Èssa**, it.  
**Èsse**, them.  
**Èssere**, be. *Èssere per* = be about to.  
**Èssi**, them.  
**Èsso**, it.  
**Fâllô**, fault.  
**Fanciúllô**, child.  
**Fâre**, make, let.  
**Farfâlla**, butterfly.  
**Fasciâre**, bandage.  
**Fêrro**, iron.  
**Figliuôlo**, child, son.  
**Figurârsi**, imagine.  
**Finchê non**, until.  
**Finêstra**, window.  
**Finîre**, finish.  
**Fîno a**, up to.  
**Fióre**, flower.  
**Fiorîto**, flowery.  
**Firenze**, Florence.  
**Firmamênto**, firmament.  
**Fôglia**, leaf.  
**Fônte**, fountain.  
**Forestiêro**, foreign.  
**Fra**, between, in, to.  
**Frédôo**, cold.  
**Frónte**, forehead.  
**Frútto**, fruit.  
**Fuggîre**, flee.  
**Fuôri**, out.  
**Fúria**, haste.  
**Gâmba**, leg.  
**Gâmbo**, stem.  
**Gâtto**, cat.  
**Genitóri**, parents.  
**Già**, already.  
**Giardîno**, garden.  
**Gíglia**, lily.  
**Giorgétto**, Georgie.  
**Giórno**, day.  
**Girár**, see **Girâre**.  
**Girâre**, go around.  
**Girâto**, gone around.  
**Gîro**, turn, circuit.  
**Gîro gîro a**, round and round.

- Giù**, down.  
**Giudizio**, judgment, idea.  
**Gli**, the.  
**Gli**, it.  
**Gli**, to him.  
**Glie**, *see* **Gli**, **Le**.  
**Glôbo**, globe.  
**Goloso**, glutton, greedy.  
**Governato**, governed.  
**Grande**, big.  
**Grandissimo**, very big.  
**Grido**, shout.  
**Grôso**, big.  
**Guardarsi**, refrain.  
**I**, the.  
**Il**, the.  
**Illuminato**, illumined.  
**Il quäle**, who.  
**Imperatore**, emperor.  
**Impêro**, empire.  
**In**, in.  
**Infatti**, in fact.  
**Infinitamente**, infinitely.  
**Infino**, even.  
**Infocato**, blazing.  
**Ingordigia**, gluttony.  
**Insegnare**, teach.  
**Insetto**, insect.  
**Insieme**, together.  
**Insomma**, in short.  
**Intendimento**, intelligence.  
**Intorno**, around (*adv.*).  
**Intorno a**, around (*prep.*).  
**Invasione**, invasion.  
**Inspirare**, inspire.  
**L'**, *see* **La**, **Le**, **Lo**.  
**La**, the.  
**La**, it, her.  
**Là**, there. *Di là* = there.  
**Lacerare**, tear.  
**Ladra**, thief.  
**Ladro**, robber.  
**Lampo**, flash.  
**Lancetta**, hand.  
**Lasciare**, leave, let, let go.  
**Lasciato**, let.  
**Lavorare**, work.  
**Le**, the.  
**Le**, to her, to it.  
**Le**, them.  
**Leone**, lion.  
**Lêsto**, quick.  
**Levare**, take away. *Levarsi (with direct object)* = get rid of.  
**Levato**, up.  
**Li**, them.  
**Lì**, there.  
**Lìbero**, free.  
**Lo**, the.  
**Lo**, him, it.  
**Longobardo**, Longobard.  
**Lontano**, distant.  
**Loro**, them, their.  
**Luce**, light.  
**Lucertola**, lizard.  
**Lui**, him, he.  
**Lume**, light.  
**Luminoso**, luminous.  
**Luna**, moon.  
**Ma**, but.  
**Madre**, mother.  
**Maestoso**, majestic.  
**Maestra**, school-mistress.  
**Maestro**, school-master.  
**Maggio**, May.  
**Maggiore**, larger.

- Mái**, ever. *Non mai* = never.  
**Malánno**, harm. *Far malánno*  
 = mischief-making.  
**Maláta**, ill.  
**Maldicénte**, gossip.  
**Mále**, badly, ill.  
**Mále**, wicked.  
**Mámma**, mother, mamma.  
**Mandáre**, send.  
**Mangiáre**, eat.  
**Maniéra**, manner.  
**Máno**, hand.  
**Mattína**, morning.  
**Méno**, less.  
**Ménto**, chin.  
**Méntre**, while.  
**Meraviglióso**, wonderful.  
**Metà**, half.  
**Méttere**, put. *Méttersi* = begin,  
 put on.  
**Mèzzo**, half.  
**Mèzzo**, middle. *In mèzzo a* = in  
 the middle of.  
**Mício**, puss, cat.  
**Milióne**, million.  
**Minacciáre**, threaten.  
**Minóre**, smaller.  
**Minúto**, minute.  
**Mío**, my.  
**Mòdo**, way.  
**Molestáre**, annoy.  
**Mólti**, many.  
**Mólto**, much.  
**Mòrdere**, bite.  
**Móscá**, fly.  
**Móstra**, face.  
**Múro**, wall.  
**Mutáre**, change.
- Nascósto**, hidden.  
**Náso**, nose.  
**Náto**, born.  
**Ne**, of it, for it.  
**Nè**, nor.  
**Néi**, nel, etc. = in + art.  
**Nemméno**, even.  
**Nessúno**, nobody.  
**Niccolíno**, Nicholas, Nick.  
**Nído**, nest.  
**No**, no. *Di no* = no.  
**Nóbile**, noble.  
**Nobiltà**, nobility.  
**Nói**, we, us.  
**Nôia**, trouble.  
**Non**, not. *Non . . . che* = only.  
**Nôstro**, our.  
**Nôtte**, night.  
**Nôve**, nine.  
**Núlla**, nothing.  
**Número**, number.  
**O**, or.  
**O**, oh.  
**Ôcchio**, eye.  
**Occhióne**, from **Ôcchio**.  
**Odóre**, odor.  
**Ôgni**, every.  
**Ognúno**, everybody.  
**Ôltre**, beyond, over.  
**Ôra**, now.  
**Ôra**, hour.  
**Oramáí**, at last.  
**Origíne**, origin.  
**Ôro**, gold.  
**Orológio**, watch.  
**Ôtto**, eight.  
**Padroncino**, little master.  
**Palázso**, palace.

- Panière**, basket.  
**Panierino**, *from Panière*.  
**Panni**, clothes.  
**Paréochio**, some.  
**Parére**, seem.  
**Parte**, part, side. *Dalle parti* = at the sides. *A questa parte* = to this time.  
**Participére**, participate.  
**Pásso**, step.  
**Pátto**, condition. *A pátto che* = on condition that.  
**Pel** = **per il**.  
**Pensáre**, think.  
**Per**, for, in order to, on account of, through, by.  
**Perchè**, why, because.  
**Pêrdere**, lose.  
**Perdonáre**, pardon.  
**Permesso**, permission.  
**Però**, therefore, however.  
**Pésce**, fish.  
**Pétto**, chest.  
**Piánta**, plant.  
**Picchiáre**, strike.  
**Piccíno**, tiny, small.  
**Piccólo**, little, small.  
**Piêde**, foot.  
**Piêno**, full.  
**Pigliáre**, take.  
**Pínna**, fin.  
**Più**, more, most.  
**Po'**, little.  
**Pòi**, then, too.  
**Portáre**, take, bring.  
**Potére**, can, be able.  
**Pôvero**, poor.  
**Prêndere**, take.  
**Prêssò**, near.  
**Prêsto**, early.  
**Pretêndere**, expect.  
**Prevalére**, prevail.  
**Prímo**, first.  
**Prónto**, quick.  
**Púbblico**, public.  
**Puníre**, punish.  
**Púnto**, point.  
**Quadrúpede**, quadruped.  
**Qualche**, some.  
**Qualchedúno**, somebody.  
**Qualcôsa**, anything.  
**Qualcúno**, somebody.  
**Quále**, *see Il quale*.  
**Quándo**, when.  
**Quánto**, as much.  
**Quattórdici**, fourteen.  
**Quáttro**, four.  
**Que', quéi**, *pl. of Quéllo*.  
**Quégli**, *pl. of Quéllo*.  
**Quel**, *see Quéllo*.  
**Quéllo**, that.  
**Quéstò**, this.  
**Qui**, here. *Di qui* = here.  
**Quíndi**, therefore.  
**Raccontáre**, relate.  
**Raggiúngere**, overtake.  
**Ragióne**, reason.  
**Rasênte**, close.  
**Recreazióne**, recess.  
**Refezióne**, lunch.  
**Rêggere**, stand, endure.  
**Respiráre**, breathe.  
**Rêttile**, reptile.  
**Riccárdo**, Richard.  
**Ricominciáre**, begin again.  
**Ricordársi**, remember.

- Ridere**, laugh.  
**Riga**, line. *Di prima riga* = first-class.  
**Righettina**, little mark.  
**Rimandare**, send back.  
**Rimanere**, remain.  
**Rimediare a**, atone for.  
**Rimproverare**, reprove.  
**Ripetere**, repeat.  
**Riposo**, rest.  
**Rispondere**, reply.  
**Risputare**, spit again.  
**Rompere**, break.  
**Rosa**, rose.  
**Rotondo**, round.  
**Rubare**, steal.  
**Sanguinoso**, bloody.  
**Sapere**, know, hear.  
**Saporaccio**, *from Sapore*.  
**Sapore**, taste.  
**Sasso**, stone.  
**Scappare**, run away.  
**Scena**, scene.  
**Scender**, *see Scendere*.  
**Scendere**, descend.  
**Scuola**, school.  
**Se**, if, whether.  
**Se**, *see Si*.  
**Se**, itself, himself, herself.  
**Secondo che**, according as.  
**Segnato**, marked.  
**Seguire**, turn out.  
**Sèi**, six.  
**Sempre**, always.  
**Senese**, Sienese.  
**Sentire**, taste, hear.  
**Senza**, without.  
**Serpè**, snake.  
**Servitore**, servant.  
**Sessanta**, sixty.  
**Sette**, seven.  
**Sfacciataggine**, impudence.  
**Si**, himself, herself, itself.  
**Si**, yes, so.  
**Signora**, lady.  
**Signore**, gentleman.  
**Signoria**, rule.  
**Simile**, like.  
**Smisurato**, boundless.  
**Soave**, sweet.  
**Solamente**, only.  
**Sole**, sun.  
**Sollcito**, early, brisk.  
**Solo**, alone.  
**Sommato**, added.  
**Sopra**, on, above. *Di sopra* = up, above.  
**Sorella**, sister.  
**Sorellina**, *from Sorella*.  
**Sorte**, lucky.  
**Sospettare**, suspect.  
**Sospetto**, suspicion.  
**Sostegno**, support.  
**Sotto**, under. *Di sotto* = down, underneath.  
**Sparire**, disappear.  
**Spicchio**, slice.  
**Spina**, thorn.  
**Sputare**, spit.  
**Stanza**, room.  
**Stare**, stay, stand.  
**Stella**, star.  
**Stesso**, himself.  
**Stesso**, same.  
**Stesso**, even.  
**Stracciare**, tear.

- Strétto**, close, tight.  
**Strilláre**, scream.  
**Su**, on, up.  
**Su'**, *sul, etc.* = *su + art.*  
**Súbito**, at once.  
**Súo**, its, his, her.  
**Tángo**, so much, so, much.  
**Tángo . . . quánto**, both . . . and.  
**Te**, thee, you.  
**Têmpo**, time.  
**Tenúto**, held.  
**Têrra**, earth, ground, land.  
**Território**, territory.  
**Ti**, thee, you.  
**Tiráre**, throw, draw. *Tirár fubri*, take out.  
**Tócco**, one o'clock.  
**Tornáre**, return, returning.  
**Tórno tórno a**, round and round.  
**Toscáno**, Tuscan.  
**Tra**, among, to.  
**Tranquillaménte**, tranquilly.  
**Trátto**: *a un trátto* = all at once.  
**Traversáre**, cross.  
**Tre**, three.  
**Trédici**, thirteen.  
**Trócco**, trunk.  
**Trováre**, find.  
**Tu**, thou, you.  
**Túo**, thy, your.  
**Tútto**, all. *Per tútto* = everywhere. *Tútti e due* = both; *tútti e tre* = all three; *etc.*  
**Uccellíno**, *from Uccello*.  
**Uccello**, bird.  
**Un**, a, one.
- Úna**, a, one.  
**Úndici**, eleven.  
**Úno**, a, one.  
**Uôvo**, egg.  
**Urláre**, yell.  
**Úscio**, door.  
**Vassoíno**, tray.  
**Vedére**, see.  
**Ventiquáttro**, twenty-four.  
**Verità**, truth.  
**Véro**, true.  
**Véscovo**, bishop.  
**Vêspa**, wasp.  
**Vestíre**, dress.  
**Vía**, off, away, so forth. *Sometimes used instead of a verb of motion.*  
**Viággio**, way, journey.  
**Vicíno**, near.  
**Viôla**, violet.  
**Viôttola**, path.  
**Víso**, face.  
**Víspo**, lively.  
**Viziáccio**, *from Vizio*.  
**Vízio**, vice.  
**Vóce**, voice.  
**Vôglia**, desire.  
**Volére**, wish.  
**Volontarlaménte**, voluntarily.  
**Vôlta**, time.  
**Voltár**, *see Voltáre*.  
**Voltáre**, turn.  
**Zámpa**, paw, foot.  
**Zampína**, little paw.  
**Zanzára**, mosquito.  
**Zimbêllo**, laughing-stock.

## ENGLISH-ITALIAN VOCABULARY.

---

<b>A</b> , un, úno, úna.	<b>Bird</b> , uccéllo.
<b>Africa</b> , África.	<b>Black</b> , néro.
<b>After</b> , dópo.	<b>Blood</b> , sánque, <i>m.</i>
<b>Ago</b> , fa.	<b>Boil</b> , bollíre.
<b>Aim</b> , miráre.	<b>Born</b> , náto. <i>Pl.</i> : náti, <i>m.</i> ; náte, <i>f.</i>
<b>Air</b> , ária.	<b>Boy</b> , ragázze.
<b>All</b> , tútto.	<b>Branch</b> , rámo.
<b>Alone</b> , sólo.	<b>Bread</b> , páne, <i>m.</i>
<b>Although</b> , sebbène.	<b>Brother</b> , fratéllo, <i>m.</i>
<b>Always</b> , sémpre.	<b>Bubble</b> , vescichétta.
<b>Amaze</b> , meravigliáre.	<b>But</b> , ma.
<b>America</b> , América.	<b>By</b> , da. <i>By chance</i> = per caso.
<b>An</b> , <i>see A.</i>	<b>Call</b> , chiamáre.
<b>Ancient</b> , antíco.	<b>Capital</b> , capitále, <i>f.</i>
<b>And</b> , e.	<b>Car</b> , vagóne, <i>m.</i>
<b>Another</b> , un áltro.	<b>Care</b> , cúra.
<b>April</b> , apríle, <i>m.</i>	<b>Carriage</b> , carròzza.
<b>Around</b> , intórno.	<b>Carry</b> , portáre.
<b>As</b> , cóme.	<b>Case</b> , caso.
<b>As . . . as</b> , quánto, tánto . . . cóme.	<b>Ceiling</b> , pálco.
<b>Asia</b> , Ásia.	<b>Chance</b> , caso. <i>By chance</i> = per caso.
<b>At</b> , a.	<b>Charged</b> , cárico.
<b>Attach</b> , attaccáre.	<b>Charity</b> , carità, <i>f.</i>
<b>August</b> , agósto.	<b>Charles</b> , Cárlo.
<b>Be</b> , éssere, <i>irreg.</i> (53, a).	<b>Choose</b> , scégliere, <i>irreg.</i>
<b>Beam</b> , tráve, <i>m. or f.</i>	<b>Christopher</b> , Cristòforo.
<b>Beast</b> , béstia.	<b>Circle</b> , tóndo.
<b>Beautiful</b> , béllo.	<b>City</b> , città, <i>f.</i>
<b>Because</b> , perchè.	<b>Cloud</b> , núvola.
<b>Begin</b> , cominciáre.	<b>Club</b> , bastóne, <i>m.</i>
<b>Believe</b> , crédere.	<b>Coat</b> , ábito.
<b>Big</b> , gròsso.	



<b>Collect</b> , raccôgliere, <i>irreg.</i>	<b>Emmanuel</b> , Emmanuêle.
<b>Columbus</b> , Colómbó.	<b>Emperor</b> , imperatóre, <i>m.</i>
<b>Come back</b> , tornáre.	<b>Empty</b> , vuôto.
<b>Companion</b> , compágno.	<b>End</b> , termináre.
<b>Confined</b> , tenúto.	<b>Enemy</b> , nemíco.
<b>Construct</b> , costruíre, <i>irreg.</i>	<b>Escape</b> , scappáre.
<b>Continue</b> , seguitáre.	<b>Europe</b> , Eurôpa.
<b>Contrary</b> , contrário.	<b>Even</b> , ánche.
<b>Cool</b> , raffreddársi.	<b>Ever</b> , mái.
<b>Corner</b> , cánto.	<b>Every</b> , ógni.
<b>Country</b> , paése, <i>m.</i>	<b>Everything</b> , tútto.
<b>Cover</b> , copríre, <i>irreg.</i>	<b>Everywhere</b> , per tútto.
<b>Creature</b> , animále, <i>m.</i>	<b>Eye</b> , <i>noun</i> , ôcchio.
<b>Crumb</b> , bríciola.	<b>Eye</b> , <i>vb.</i> , occhiáre.
<b>Crush</b> , schiacciáre.	<b>Fall</b> , cadúta.
<b>Dark</b> , búio.	<b>Family</b> , famíglia, <i>f.</i>
<b>Day</b> , giòrno.	<b>Far</b> , lontáno.
<b>December</b> , dicêmbre, <i>m.</i>	<b>Father</b> , pádre, <i>m.</i> , bábbó.
<b>Dense</b> , dênso.	<b>February</b> , febbráio.
<b>Department</b> , dipartiménto.	<b>Fief</b> , féudo.
<b>Discover</b> , scopríre, <i>irreg.</i>	<b>Fifth</b> , quínto.
<b>Distance</b> , distánza.	<b>Find</b> , trováre.
<b>Divide</b> , dividere, <i>irreg.</i>	<b>Finger</b> , díto. <i>Pl. díta, f.</i>
<b>Do</b> , fáre, <i>irreg.</i>	<b>Fire</b> , fuôco.
<b>Dominion</b> , domínio.	<b>First</b> , prímo. <i>Adv.</i> , <i>príma.</i>
<b>Door</b> , úscio.	<b>Five</b> , cínque.
<b>Down</b> , giù.	<b>Flat</b> , piátto.
<b>Dream</b> , sognáre.	<b>Flee</b> , fuggíre.
<b>Drop</b> , gócciola. <i>Drop by drop</i> = a gócciola a gócciola.	<b>Flower</b> , fióre, <i>m.</i>
<b>Duke</b> , dúca, <i>m.</i>	<b>Fly</b> , voláre.
<b>Dungeon</b> , cárcere, <i>f.</i>	<b>Food</b> , mangiáre, <i>m.</i>
<b>Dust</b> , pólvore, <i>f.</i>	<b>For</b> , per. <i>For yourself (conjunc-</i> <i>tive)</i> = <i>vi, si.</i>
<b>Earn</b> , guadagnáre.	<b>Form</b> , formáre.
<b>Earth</b> , têrra.	<b>Fort</b> , fortézza.
<b>Eight hundred</b> , ottocênto.	<b>Forth</b> , fuôri.
<b>Eighty</b> , ottánta.	<b>Forty</b> , quaránta.
<b>Either . . . or</b> , o . . . o.	<b>Four</b> , quáttro.

- Four hundred**, quattrocênto.  
**France**, Frânciâ, *f*.  
**Friday**, venerdì, *m*.  
**Friend**, amîco, *m*.  
**From**, da.  
**Fruit**, frûtto.  
**Furniture**, mobîlia.  
**Genoa**, Gênova.  
**Give**, dâre, *irreg.*  
**Go**, andâre, *irreg.*  
**Good**, buòno.  
**Grain**, grâno.  
**Great**, grânde.  
**Ground**, têrra.  
**Grove**, boschétto.  
**Grow up**, venîr su, *irreg.*  
**Gun**, schiôppo, fucîle, *m*.  
**Hand**, mâno, *f*.  
**Happen**, accadére, *irreg.*  
**Hardly**, appéna.  
**Hasten**, affrettârsi.  
**Hate**, odiâre.  
**Have**, avére, *irreg.* (53, *b*).  
**He**, égli, lúi.  
**Heat**, cáldo.  
**Her**, la, le, lêi.  
**Herb**, êrba.  
**Here**, qua.  
**High**, álto.  
**Him**, lo, gli, lúi. *To him* = gli, a lúi.  
**Himself**, si.  
**His**, súo.  
**History**, stôria.  
**Holiday**, fêsta.  
**Honest**, onêsto.  
**However**, tuttavía.  
**Hunter**, cacciátore, *m*.  
**I**, ío.  
**If**, se.  
**Imagine**, immagináre.  
**In**, in.  
**Indeed**, davvéro.  
**Inhabit**, abitâre.  
**Inside**, didéntro.  
**Instance**, esêmpio.  
**Intense**, vívo.  
**Intention**, intenzióne, *f*.  
**Into**, in.  
**It**, lo, la, égli, gli.  
**Italian**, italiâno.  
**Italy**, Itâlia, *f*.  
**Its**, súo, súa.  
**Itself**, si.  
**Jailer**, carceriére, *m*.  
**January**, gennâio.  
**July**, lúglio.  
**June**, giúgno.  
**King**, re, *m*.  
**Know**, sapére, *irreg.*, conóscere  
 (= *be acquainted with*), *irreg.*  
**Land**, paése, *m.*, têrra.  
**Large**, grânde.  
**Last**, último (*precedes noun*).  
*Last year* = l' ánnno scórso.  
**Latter**, quésto. *The latter* = quésti, *m. sing.*  
**Leaf**, fôglia.  
**Leap-year**, bisestîle, *m*.  
**Learn**, imparâre.  
**Left**, sinîstra.  
**Lid**, têsto.  
**Lift**, sollevâre.  
**Light**, lúce, *f*.  
**Like**, cóme.  
**Little** (= *small*), píccolo, píccíno.

**Little** (= *a small quantity*), pòco.

*Little by little* = a pòco a pòco.

**Live**, vivere, *irreg.*

**Loaded**, càrico.

**Lorraine**: *of Lorraine* = lorenése.

**Loud**, fòrte.

**Low**, bàsso.

**Lower**, abbassàre.

**Man**, uòmo, *pl.* uòmini.

**Many**, mólti, *m.*, mólte, *f.*

**March**, mároz.

**Mask**, máscera.

**May**, mággio.

**Me**, mi, me.

**Melon**, cocòmero.

**Merchant**, mercànte, *m.*

**Middle**, mézzo.

**Mignonette**, amoríno.

**Mine**, mío.

**Moisture**, umidità, *f.*

**Monday**, lunedì, *m.*

**Month**, mése, *m.*

**Moon**, lúna.

**More**, più.

**Mortify**, mortificàre.

**Meat**, il più.

**Mr.**, signór.

**My**, mío.

**Name**, nóme, *m.*

**Napoleon**, Napoleóne.

**Near**, vicíno a.

**Need**, bisógno.

**Never**, non . . . mái.

**Nice**, gentíle.

**Ninety**, novánta.

**No**, no.

**Nobody**, nessúno.

**Nor**, nè.

**Not**, non.

**November**, novémbré.

**Now**, óra.

**Object**, oggétto.

**Observe**, osservàre.

**Oceanica**, Oceánia.

**October**, ottóbbré.

**Of**, di. *Of them* = ne.

**On**, sópra, su (*before vow., sur*).

**One**, úno.

**One's self**, si.

**Only**, sólo (*adj.*), non . . . che (*adv.*).

**Opposite**, oppósto.

**Or**, o.

**Other**, áltro.

**Ought**, devére, *irreg.*

**Out**, fuòri.

**Outside**, difuòri, *m.*

**Over there**, laggiù.

**Pace**, pássso.

**Parents**, genitóri, *m. pl.*

**Paris**, Parigi.

**Parrot**, pappagállo.

**Part**, pártte, *f.*

**Peasant**, contadíno.

**Perfectly**, pròprio.

**Perhaps**, fòrse.

**Persuade**, persuadére, *irreg.*

**Philip**, Filíppe.

**Place**, luógo.

**Placed**, pósto.

**Plainly**, schiettaménte.

**Plant**, piánta.

**Point**, púnto.

**Poor**, pòvero.

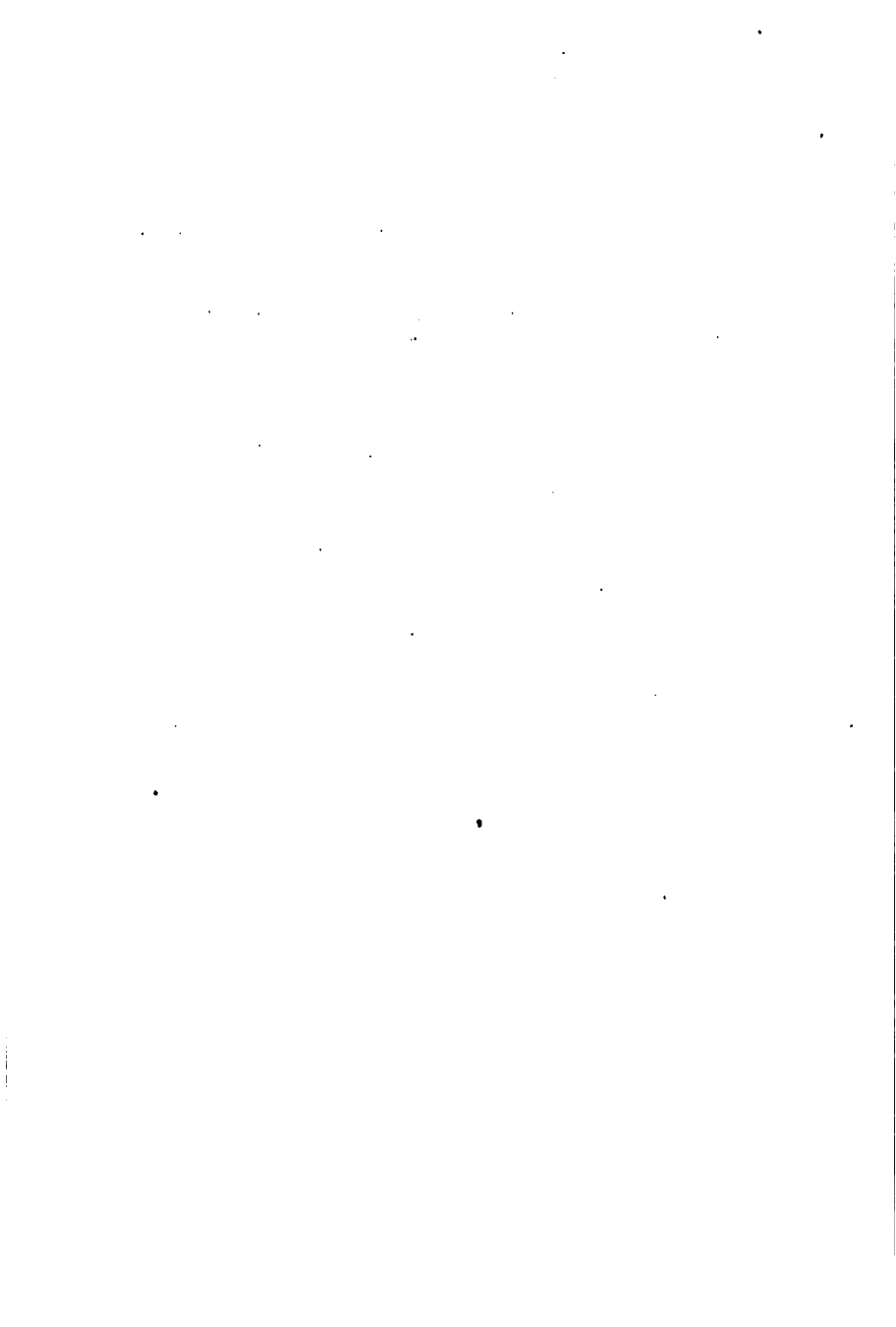
**Pot**, péntola.

**Present**, presentàre.

<b>Prevent</b> , impedíre.	<b>Seven</b> , sètte.
<b>Principle</b> , principio.	<b>Shake</b> , scuòtere, <i>irreg.</i>
<b>Prison</b> , prigione, <i>f.</i>	<b>Ship</b> , náve, <i>f.</i>
<b>Prisoner</b> , prigioniero.	<b>Shoot</b> , bársa.
<b>Profession</b> , professione, <i>f.</i>	<b>Short</b> , córto.
<b>Purpose</b> , úso.	<b>Show off</b> , far vedére, <i>irreg.</i>
<b>Quantity</b> , quantità, <i>f.</i>	<b>Side</b> , pártè, <i>f.</i>
<b>Question</b> , dománda.	<b>Silence</b> , silénzio.
<b>Rain</b> , piöggia.	<b>Sinister</b> , sinistro.
<b>Raise</b> , leváre.	<b>Sir</b> , signóre, <i>m.</i>
<b>Rare</b> , ráro.	<b>Sixty</b> , sessánta.
<b>Recognized</b> , conosciuto.	<b>Sky</b> , ciélo.
<b>Relate</b> , raccontáre.	<b>Small</b> , píccolo, piccino.
<b>Remain</b> , rimanére, <i>irreg.</i> , restáre.	<b>Smoke</b> , fúmo.
<b>Repeat</b> , ripêtere.	<b>So</b> , così.
<b>Reply</b> , rispóndere, <i>irreg.</i>	<b>So as to</b> , per.
<b>Resolve</b> , risciógliere, <i>irreg.</i>	<b>Some</b> , quálche.
<b>Rest</b> , posáre.	<b>Somebody else</b> , qualchedun' ál tro.
<b>Right</b> , dèstra.	<b>Sometimes</b> , qualchevòlta.
<b>Rise</b> , salíre, <i>irreg.</i>	<b>So much</b> , tánto.
<b>Room</b> , stánza.	<b>Son</b> , figlio.
<b>Root</b> , radíce, <i>f.</i>	<b>Sort</b> , sòrta.
<b>Round</b> , rotóndo.	<b>Spaniard</b> , spagnuòlo.
<b>Rule</b> , signoría.	<b>Speak</b> , parláre.
<b>Sacrifice</b> , sacrificio.	<b>Spider</b> , rágno, rágnolo.
<b>Sail</b> , navigáre.	<b>Sprouted</b> , germogliáto.
<b>Sailor</b> , marináro.	<b>Stalk</b> , fústo.
<b>Same</b> , stéssó ( <i>precedes noun</i> ).	<b>Star</b> , stélla.
<b>Satisfy</b> , contentáre.	<b>Steam</b> , vapóre, <i>m.</i>
<b>Saturday</b> , sábató.	<b>Straight</b> , dirítto.
<b>Say</b> , díre, <i>irreg.</i>	<b>Study</b> , <i>noun</i> , stúdio.
<b>Sea</b> , máre, <i>m.</i>	<b>Study</b> , <i>vb.</i> , studiáre.
<b>Second</b> , secóndo.	<b>Sun</b> , sóle, <i>m.</i>
<b>See</b> , vedére, <i>irreg.</i>	<b>Sunday</b> , doménica.
<b>Seed</b> , séme, <i>m.</i>	<b>Support</b> , mantenére, <i>irreg.</i>
<b>Sent</b> , mandáto.	<b>Surprised</b> , sorpréso.
<b>September</b> , settémbre, <i>m.</i>	<b>Surround</b> , circondáre.
<b>Service</b> , servízio.	

<b>Table</b> , távola.	<b>Tuscan</b> , toscáno.
<b>Take</b> , prèndere, <i>irreg.</i>	<b>Twelve</b> , dódici.
<b>Tear</b> , raschiàre.	<b>Twenty-eight</b> , ventôtto.
<b>Than</b> , che, di.	<b>Twenty-nine</b> , ventinôve.
<b>Thanks</b> , grázie, <i>f. pl.</i>	<b>Twig</b> , ramoscéllò.
<b>That</b> , <i>conj.</i> , che.	<b>Two</b> , dúe.
<b>That</b> , <i>rel. pron.</i> , che.	<b>Under</b> , sótto.
<b>That</b> , <i>demons. pron.</i> , quéllo.	<b>Unfortunate</b> , infelíce.
<b>The</b> , il, lo, la, i, gli, le.	<b>Unhappy</b> , sventuráto.
<b>Them</b> , li, le, lóro. <i>Of them</i> = ne.	<b>Union</b> , unióne, <i>f.</i>
<b>Then</b> , pòi.	<b>Unite</b> , raccògliere, <i>irreg.</i>
<b>There</b> , là, lì.	<b>Until</b> , <i>prep.</i> , fíno a.
<b>Therefore</b> , però.	<b>Until</b> , <i>conj.</i> , finchè . . . non.
<b>They</b> , éssi, ésse, lóro.	<b>Us</b> , nói, ci ( <i>conjunctive</i> ).
<b>Thick</b> , gróssò.	<b>Usual</b> , usáto.
<b>Thing</b> , còsa.	<b>Vapor</b> , vapóre, <i>m.</i>
<b>Think</b> , pensàre.	<b>Vegetable</b> , vegetábile, <i>m.</i>
<b>Third</b> , têrzo.	<b>Very</b> , mólto, tánto.
<b>Thirtieth</b> , trentésimo.	<b>Victor</b> , Vittório.
<b>Thirty</b> , trénta.	<b>Villa</b> , vílla.
<b>Thirty-first</b> , trentésimo prímo.	<b>Village</b> , villággio.
<b>Thirty-one</b> , trentúno, trentún.	<b>Water</b> , ácqua.
<b>This</b> , quéstò.	<b>Way</b> (= <i>manner</i> ), manières.
<b>Thousand</b> , mílle.	<b>We</b> , nói.
<b>Three</b> , tre.	<b>Web</b> , téla.
<b>Three hundred</b> , trecênto.	<b>Wednesday</b> , mercoledì, <i>m.</i>
<b>Thursday</b> , giovedì, <i>m.</i>	<b>Week</b> , settimána.
<b>Thus</b> , cosí.	<b>What</b> , <i>interrog. and exclam.</i> che.
<b>Time</b> , ( <i>Ex. 2</i> ) vólta; ( <i>Ex. 18 and</i> 20) têmpo.	<b>What</b> , <i>rel.</i> , quéllo che.
<b>To</b> , a. <i>To him</i> = gli.	<b>When</b> , quándo.
<b>Together</b> , insiême.	<b>Where</b> , dóve.
<b>Too</b> (= <i>also</i> ), ánche.	<b>Which</b> , che.
<b>Too</b> (= <i>excessively</i> ), trôppo.	<b>While</b> , méntre.
<b>Tree</b> , álbero.	<b>Who</b> , <i>rel.</i> , che.
<b>Trunk</b> , tróncò.	<b>Whom</b> , <i>rel.</i> , cúí.
<b>Tuesday</b> , martedì, <i>m.</i>	<b>Willingly</b> , volentiêri.
<b>Turn</b> , giráre.	<b>Wind</b> , vénto.

**Window, finèstra.****With, con.****Without, sénza.****Wood, bôsko.****Word, parôla.****Working-day, giòrno di lavóro.****World, móndo.****Year, áнно.****Yes, già.****You, vói, vi, Lèi, la, le. *To you***  
**= vi, le.****Your, vôstro, Sùo.****Yourself, vi, si. *For yourself***  
**vi, si.**



## APPENDIX.

---

### ADDITIONAL NOTES ON PRONUNCIATION.

[The numbers prefixed to the following notes refer to the paragraphs of the first chapter in this book.]

1. The Tuscan names of the letters are : *a, bi, ci, di, é, éffe, gi, ácca, i, jé* or *i lúngo, élle, émmé, énné, ó, pi, cu, érre, ésse, ti, u, vu* or *vi, zèta* (with *z* pronounced *dz*). They do not change in the plural. Their gender is not fixed ; in general those ending in *a* or *e* are considered as feminine, the others as masculine. *K, x, y* are *cáppa, tccase, tpsilon*, all masculine.

2. *a.* The sounds *á, é, ó*, followed by a single consonant, are somewhat longer than the other vowels : for instance, in *dáto, féro, óvo* the accented *a, e, o* are longer than in *dáttero, véro, óve*. Final accented vowels sound particularly short : as in *amò, beltà, caffè*.

*β.* In forming *i* the mouth should be made as broad as possible from side to side. For *u* and *ó* the lips should be puckered. For *a* and *é* the mouth should be opened very wide.

3. *a.* If an adverb in *-mente* is formed from an adjective containing *é* or *ó*, this vowel has, in the adverb, a secondary accent, and retains its open sound : as (*brève*) *brèvemente*, "briefly"; (*nobile*) *nòbilmente*, "nobly." Furthermore, *é* and *ó* retain their quality in seeming compounds that consist, in reality, of two or more separate words : as *tostochè = tòstoché = tòsto che*, "as soon as."

*β.* Preterites and past participles in *-esi, -eso, -osi, -oso* have a close *e* or *o* ; except *chièsi* (also *chiési*), *esplòsi, esplòso, lèsi* (not used), *lèso*.



γ. In the suffixes *-eccio* (-a), *-esco* (-a), *-ese*, *-essa*, *-etto* (-a), *-ezzo* (-a), *-mente*, and *-mento* the *e* is always close; while in the diminutive suffix *-ello* (-a), and in the endings *-ente*, *-enza*, *-erio* (or *-ero*), and *-esimo* (-a) it is open: as *inglèse*, "English"; *probabilmente*, "probably"; *prudente*, "prudent"; *ventèsimo*, "twentieth."

δ. In the endings *-oio*, *-one*, *-ore*, and in the suffix *-oso* (-a) the *o* is close; while in the ending *-orio*, and in *-occio* (-a), *-otto* (-a), and *-ozzo* (-a), used as suffixes to nouns or adjectives, it is open: as *vassóio*, "tray"; *amóre*, "love"; *romitòrio*, "hermitage"; *casòtta*, "good-sized house."

ε. In the following cases accented *e* or *o* may have either the close or the open sound: in *Giorgio*, *maestra*, *maestro*, *nego* (from *negàre*), *neve*, *organo*, *scendere*, *senza*, *siete* and *sono* (from *èssere*), *spegnere*, *Stefano*, *vendere*; and in the conditional endings *-esti*, *-emmo*, *-este*. The present subjunctive forms *dieno*, *sieno*, *stieno* are pronounced also *dièno*, *sièno*, *stièno*.

ζ. In poetry we often find *ê* for *iè*, *ò* for *uò*: as *ven* = *viène*, "he comes"; *cor* = *cudre*, "heart."

4. C. α. Between two vowels, of which the second is *e* or *i*, single *c* and single *g* are, in ordinary Tuscan speech, pronounced respectively like *sh* in "ship" and *si* in "vision": as *páce*, "peace"; *stagíone*, "season."

β. Between two vowels, of which the second is *a*, *o*, or *u*, a single *c* is, in popular Tuscan speech, sounded nearly like English *h*: as *poco* (*pòho*), "little"; *di questa cosa* (*di hwèsta hòsa*), "of this thing." This pronunciation is regarded as vulgar.

J. Some writers use *j*, except after a consonant, for the *i* that is pronounced *y*: as *jeri* for *ièri*, "yesterday"; *pajo* for *páio*, "pair." It is sometimes used also for final *i* in the plural of words in unaccented *-io*: as *specchj* (also *speccht* and occasionally *specchiù*) for *spécchi*, "mirrors," plural of *spécchio*.

Z. Aside from verbs in *-izzare*, *z* and *zz* have the value *dz* in the following words and their derivatives:—

arzillo	frizzo	magazzino	romanzo	zêlo
azzurro	garzone	manzo	ronzio	zenit
barzellèta	gazzèlla	mèzzo	ròzzo	zêro
bizza	gazzèta	orizzònte	zaffiro	zêta
brèzza	gónzo	ôrzo	zaffrone	zínco
brónzo	Lázzaro	pênzolo	zanzára	zodiaco
donzèlla	lazzèrétto	pránzo	zêbra	zèlla
dozzina	lázzo	ribrézzo	zêffiro	zôna

also in all derivatives of the Greek *zoos*, and in many uncommon words.

5. In pronouncing *gli* and *gn* the point of the tongue should remain behind the lower teeth: 'as *figlio*, "son"; *ogni*, "every."

6. If one of the words mentioned below, or any oxytone ending in a vowel, is closely followed by a word beginning with a consonant, this consonant is, in Tuscany, generally pronounced double. The words are: \*—

a	di, <i>day</i>	giù	o §	sópra
che	di', <i>say</i>	ha	più	sta †
chi	e	ho	qua	sto
ciò	è	infra	qualche	su
cóme	fa †	intra	qui	te †
cóntra	fè, <i>faith</i>	là	re	tra
da	fe' = féce	li	sa	tre
dà, <i>gives</i>	fo	ma	se, <i>if</i>	tu
da', <i>give</i>	fra	me †	sè	va †
do	fu	mo' = mōdo	si	vo = vádo
dóve	già	nè	so	vo' = vōglio

Ex.: *verrà da me domani* (*verràddammèddomàni*), "he will come to my house to-morrow." In such cases *c* is, of course, never pronounced like *h* (see 4, C, β).

---

\* The materials for this list were taken from D' Ovidio's article in Gröber's *Grundriss der romanischen Philologie*, p. 496.

† Both the imperative sing. and the pres. ind. third sing.

‡ The disjunctive form.

§ Both the conjunction "or" and the interrogative particle.

## INFLECTIONS OF THE VOICE.

1. Italian speech is at once smoother and less monotonous than American: it is less interrupted by breathings, and it has far greater variations of pitch. In order to speak or read Italian well, an American must learn to breathe in speaking as he does in singing; he must inhale deeply at the beginning of the clause, and not stop again until he reaches the end of it. The following directions may be of use; they are based on the Tuscan pronunciation, and particularly on that of Siena.

2. *a.* The simplest inflection in a declarative sentence is as follows: at the beginning the voice is pitched low; it rises in the middle (in earnest conversation often to a falsetto), and falls again at the end. The most emphatic word generally receives the highest tone; if there are no words after it to complete the cadence, the first words of the phrase are often repeated at the end: as *me lo dicono tutti me lo dicono* ("they all tell me so"), where the *u* of *tutti* is an octave higher than the beginning and the close of the sentence.

*β.* When there is a pause on some not particularly emphatic word before the main verb, that word has a slight circumflex accent, the voice rising about one semitone and falling about three: as *fuori di città ^ c'è una bellissima villa \* ("outside the city there's a beautiful villa"), where *bellissima* has the high pitch, and the *a* of *città* has the circumflex. This accent is generally heard whenever modifying clauses or phrases precede the main clause.

*γ.* Almost all declarative sentences are made up chiefly of these two inflections, the long rise and fall and the short circumflex. Americans must avoid breaking up their sentences by meaninglessly falling tones. The fall occurs in Italian, as in English, on a very emphatic word, and at the end of a sentence. It is used, also, with a verb of saying or thinking, followed by a direct quotation;

and with any word or phrase used as a vocative, except in loud calling (see 4,  $\beta$ ): as *allóra chidma Alfrédo e gli dice \*: *Bambino \*, *dimmi la verità \* (*Grammar*, Exercise 17), where the syllables *fre*, *bam*, and *dim* have the highest pitch.

3.  $\alpha$ . Questions to which the answer may be "yes" or "no" have either one of two circumflex accents: in the first the voice rises about five semitones and falls one; in the second, which is sometimes used in reading and in polite phrases, the voice rises and falls about an octave. Ex.: *l' hái visto* ("have you seen him?"), where the pitches of *l' hái*, *vi*, and *sto* may be represented by the notes *do*, *fa*, *mi*; *ha bèn dormito* ("did you sleep well?"), where *mi* is an octave higher than *dor* and *to*. The former accent may be heard in the Irish pronunciation of English.

$\beta$ . These inflections are nearly always confined to the last few syllables of the sentence. In some questions, however, they appear twice, generally occurring first on the verb; and occasionally the circumflex on the verb is the only one.

$\gamma$ . Questions that cannot be answered by "yes" or "no" usually begin high, the pitch depending on the emphasis. The voice then falls, but generally rises again at the last syllable, going up about three semitones: as *o còme \ hái fátto /* ("how did you do it?"). This accent is common among the Irish, and may be heard in England. The final rise is, however, often omitted, especially in very short sentences and in polite phrases: as *còme sta \* ("how do you do?").

4.  $\alpha$ . Exclamations of surprise begin very high, and sink rapidly: as *sènti \* ("no!"\*); *un affàr di niènte \* ("you don't say so!"\*), where *un* has the main stress; *per mio bácco* ("I want to know!"\*), with the accent on *per*.

$\beta$ . In calling to persons at a distance, the Tuscans sing rather than speak; the usual tune is *do, la, sol*, the accented syllable being highest: as *Agostina* ("Augustine!"); *partènza* ("all aboard!").

---

\* Popular New England equivalents.



# INDEX.

[The numbers refer to paragraphs. *Ap. N.* means "Appendix, Additional Notes on Pronunciation"; *Ap. V.* stands for "Appendix, Inflections of the Voice."]

**A (letter):** 2; *Ap. N.*, 2.

**A (preposition):** 79; 79, *b, h*.

**Accent:** 7; 47; 48; 84; 92, *c*;  
*Ap. V.*

**Accents:** 3; 7.

**Address (Forms of):** 52.

**Adjectives:** 26-34.

Comparison: 31-34.

Gender: 26; 28.

Number: 26; 29.

Position: 27.

Used as nouns: 20; 30.

**Adverbs:** 80-85.

*Ci, vi*: 47, *a*; 84.

Comparison: 80, 2.

**Manner:** 85.

*Ne*: 47, *a*; 56, *b*.

*Never*: 83.

*Not, non*: 80, 1; 81; 91, *a*.

*Only*: 82.

Position: 80, 1.

*So*: 85, *a*.

**All:** 87.

**Alphabet:** 1; *Ap. N.*, 1.

**Altru:** 91, *d*.

**Any:** 88.

**Articles:** 9-16.

Definite: see **Definite**.

Indefinite: see **Indefinite**.

**Augmentatives:** 35-37.

**Auxiliary Verbs:** 53-57.

*Avere*: 53, *b*; 54, 3.

*Essere*: 53, *a*; 54, 1, 3.

Compound tenses: 54; 56.

Modal auxiliaries: 57.

**Avere:** 53, *b*; 54, 3; 54, *b*; 92, 5.

**Be:** 53, *a*; 54, 1, 3; 54, *a, c, d, f*;  
92, 126.

**Bello:** 29, *c*.

**Both:** 38, 4; 91.

**Buono:** 29, *c*.

**Can:** see **Modal Auxiliaries**.

**Ci (adv.):** 47, *a*; 84.

**Ci (pron.):** 47-50.

**Close Vowels:** 3; *Ap. N.*, 3.

**Comparison:** 31-34; 80, 2.

Adjectives: 31-34.

Adverbs: 80, 2.

Irregular: 31, *a*; 80, 2.

**Compound Tenses:** 54; 56; 73;  
75.

**Conditional:** 54, 2; 68, *b*; 76; 77;  
92, *c*.

Contracted: 65; 66, 1; 92, *c*.

**Conjugation:** 53-68; 92.

First: 59.

Second: 60.

Third: 60.

- Fourth:** 61.  
**Variations:** 63; 66, *a*; 68.  
**Irregular verbs:** 64-68; 92.  
**Auxiliary verbs:** 53-57.  
**Compound tenses:** 54; 56.  
**Compound verbs:** 67, *a*; 93, *a*.  
**Conjunctions:** 78.  
     With subjunctive: 77, *d*; 78, *a*, *b*.  
**Consonants:** 4-6; Ap. N., 4-6.  
**Contraction:** 12; 23 (†); 50 (\*);  
     63, *d*; 65; 66, *i*; 68, *a*.  
**Da:** 79, *c*, *f*, *g*.  
**Dates:** 38, *b*; 39, *b*.  
**Definite Article:** 10-13.  
     Form: 10-12.  
     Use: 12, *a*; 13; 38, *b*; 39, *a*;  
         45; 69; 70.  
**Di:** 12; 17; 79, *b*, 3, *f*, *h*, *j*.  
**Diminutives:** 35-37.  
**Do:** 54, *g*.  
**Double Letters:** 6.  
**Doubling:** 48, *d*; 93, *a*; Ap. N., 6.  
**E** (letter): 3; 68, *i*, *j*; Ap. N., 3.  
**E** (conjunction): 78; 78, *c*.  
**Ecco:** 48, *c*; 84, *a*.  
**Essere:** 53, *a*; 54, *i*, 3; 54, *a*, *c*, *d*;  
     92, 126.  
**Exclamations:** 43, *b*; 79, *b*; Ap.  
     V., 4.  
**For:** 79, *e*.  
**Fractions:** 39, *c*.  
**Future:** 54, 2; 68, *c*; 74; 77.  
     Contracted: 65; 66, *i*.  
**Gender:** 9-11; 14-15; 18-21; 26;  
     28.  
**Grande:** 29, *c*.  
**H:** 4; 22, *a*; 23, *a*, *c*; 59, *a*.  
**Have:** 53, *b*; 54, 3; 54, *b*, *h*; 57, *a*;  
     92, 5.  
**Here:** 84.  
**I** (letter): 2; 22, *b*; 23, *b*; 59, *a*;  
     60; 92, *f*; Ap. N., 2.  
**I** (euphonic): 79; 81.  
**Imperative:** 66, *b*; 72; 77, *a*.  
**Imperfect:**  
     Form: 63; 63, *c*; 65; 68, *a*, *h*.  
     Use: 54, *d*, *e*; 73; 75. [77, *c*.  
**Impersonal Verbs:** 51; 51, *h*;  
**Indefinite Article:** 14-16.  
     Form: 14-15.  
     Use: 16; 38, *i*; 43, *b*.  
**Infinitive:** 48, *b*; 58; 69-72.  
     Contracted: 65.  
**Inflections of the voice:** Ap. V.  
**Interrogation:** see **Questions**.  
**Issimo** (suffix): 35, *a*.  
**It:** 47; 51; 51, *h*.  
**Letters:** 1; Ap. N., 1.  
**May:** see **Modal Auxiliaries**.  
**Modal Auxiliaries:** 57.  
**Moods:** 57; 69-77; 78, *a*.  
     Conditional: 54, 2; 65; 66, *i*;  
         68, *b*; 76; 77.  
     Imperative: 66, *b*; 72; 77, *a*.  
     Infinitive: 48, *b*; 58; 65; 69-72.  
     Participle: 54, *a*, *b*; 62; 63, *d*;  
         69-71.  
     Subjunctive: 44, *c*; 77; 78, *a*.  
**Must:** see **Modal Auxiliaries**.  
**Myself**, **thysself**, etc.: 47, 2; 51, *c*.  
**Ne** (adv.): 47, *a*; 56, *b*; 84.  
**Ne** (pron.): 47, 3; 48; 49; 88; 89.

**Neuter Verbs:** 54, 3; 56, *a*.

**Never:** 83.

**Non:** 80, 1; 81; 91, *a*.

**Not:** 80, 1; 81.

**Nouns:** 17-25.

Gender: 18-21.

Number: 22-25.

**Number:** 9-11; 22-25; 29.

**Numerals:** 38-40.

Cardinal: 38.

Ordinal: 39.

**O (letter):** 3; 59, *b*; Ap. N., 3.

**O (conjunction):** 78; 78, *c*.

**Old Forms:** 19(†); 23(†); 47(\*);

48, *d*; 50(\*); 63, *d*; 66, *a*;

68; 92; Ap. N., 3, *ç*.

**One (indefinite):** 55; 86.

**Only:** 82.

**Open Vowels:** 3; Ap. N., 3.

**Ought:** see **Modal Auxiliaries**.

**Participle:** 54, *a*, *b*; 62; 63, *d*;  
69-71.

Past: 54, *a*, *b*; 63, *d*; 71, *c*.

Present: 62; 69-71.

**Partitive Genitive:** 12, *a*; 88; 89.

**Passive:** 54, 1; 54, *f*; 55; 56, *c*.

**Perfect Tenses:** 54, 3; 56; 73;  
75.

**Personal Pronouns:** 46-52.

Conjunctive: 47-50.

Form: 47; 48, *c*, *d*; 50;  
52, 1.

Position: 48; 49.

Disjunctive: 51-52.

Omission: 51, 2; 51, *h*.

Use: 51; 51, 1; 51, *a*, *b*, *h*.

**Pitch:** Ap. V.

**Plural:** 22-25; 29.

Irregular: 23, *d*; 25.

Words in *-co* and *-go*: 23, *c*.

**Poetic Forms:** see **Old**.

**Possessive:** 17; 45; 52, 1.

**Prefixes:** 93, *a*.

**Prepositions:** 79.

*Da*: 79, *c*, *f*, *g*.

*To*: 79, *a*, *b*.

[74.

**Present:** 65; 66, 4; 68, *f*, *g*; 73;

**Preterite:** 60; 65; 66, 2, 3; 68,  
*d*, *c*; 75.

**Preterite Perfect:** 54, 3; 75.

**Pronouns:** 41-52; 86-91.

Demonstrative: 42.

Indefinite: 86-91.

Interrogative, 43.

Personal: see **Personal**.

Possessive: see **Possessive**.

Reciprocal: see **Reciprocal**.

Reflexive: see **Reflexive**.

Relative: 44.

**Pronunciation:** 1-8; Ap. N., 1-6;  
Ap. V.

**Quantity:** 2; Ap. N., 2.

**Qualche:** 29, *b*; 89.

**Questions:** 43; 51, 2; 77, *f*, *g*;  
79, *b*; 81, *a*; Ap. V., 3.

**Reciprocal pronouns and verbs:**

47, 2; 48; 49; 50; 51, 3;  
51, *f*; 52, 1; 56, *b*.

**Reflexive Pronouns:** 47, 2; 48;  
49; 50; 51, 3; 52, 1; 55;  
56, *b*; 63, *a*; 86.

**Reflexive Verbs:** 55; 56, *b*; 63, *a*;  
86.

**Santo:** 29, *c*.

**Shall:** 54, 2; 57.



**Should:** 54, 2; 57; 76; 77.

**Si:** 47-50; 52; 55; 56, *b*; 63, *a*;  
86.

**So:** 85, *a*.

**Some:** 89.

**Spelling:** 1-8.

**Subjunctive:** 44, *c*; 77; 78, *a*.

**Suffixes:** 35-37; 85; Ap. N., 3.

**Syllables:** 8.

### **Tenses:**

Compound: 54; 56; 73;  
75.

Future: see **Future**.

Imperfect: see **Imperfect**.

Present: see **Present**.

Preterite: see **Preterite**.

**Than:** 33.

**There:** 84.

**Time of day:** 38, *c*.

**To:** 79, *a*, *b*.

**U** (letter): 2; Ap. N., 2.

**Verbs:** 53-77; 92; 93.

Auxiliary verbs: see **Auxiliary**.

Conjugation: see **Conjugation**.

Lists of irregular verbs: 92; 93.

Alphabetical: 93.

By conjugations: 92.

Moods: see **Moods**.

Tenses: see **Tenses**.

Regular verbs: 55-56; 59-63.

Irregular verbs: 64-68; 92.

Regular parts: 66.

Compound verbs: 67, *a*;  
93, *a*.

Old forms: 63, *d*; 68; 92.

**V1** (adv.): 47, *a*; 84.

**Vowels:** 2-3; Ap. N., 2-3.

**Whatever:** 44, *c*.

**Whoever:** 44, *c*.

**Will:** 54, 2; 57.

**Would:** 54, 2; 54, *c*; 57; 76; 77.

**You:** 52; 86.

# Heath's Modern Language Series.

*Introduction prices are quoted unless otherwise stated.*

## FRENCH GRAMMARS AND READERS.

- Edgren's Compendious French Grammar.** A *working* grammar for high school or college; adapted to the needs of the beginner and the advanced scholar. Half leather, \$1.12.
- Edgren's French Grammar, Part I.** For those who wish to learn quickly to read French. 35 cts.
- Supplementary Exercises to Edgren's French Grammar (Locard).** French-English and English-French exercises to accompany each lesson. 12 cts.
- Grandgent's Short French Grammar.** Brief and easy, yet complete enough for all elementary work, and abreast of the best scholarship and practical experience of to-day. 60 cts. With LESSONS AND EXERCISES, 75 cts.
- Grandgent's French Lessons and Exercises.** Necessarily used with the SHORT FRENCH GRAMMAR. *First Year's Course for High Schools, No. 1; First Year's Course for Colleges, No. 1.* Limp cloth. Introduction price, each 15 cts.
- Grandgent's French Lessons and Exercises.** *First Year's Course for Grammar Schools.* Limp cloth. 59 pages. 25 cents. *Second Year's Course for Grammar Schools.* Limp cloth. 72 pages. 30 cts.
- Grandgent's Materials for French Composition.** Five graded pamphlets based on *La Pipe de Jean Bart*, *La dernière classe*, *Le Siège de Berlin*, *Peppino*, *L'Abbé Constantin*, respectively. Each, 12 cts.
- Grandgent's French Composition.** Elementary, progressive and varied selections, with full notes and vocabulary. Cloth. 150 pages. 50 cts.
- Kimball's Materials for French Composition.** Based on *Colomba*, for second year's work; based on *La Belle-Nivernaise* for third year's work. Each, 12 cts.
- Storr's Hints on French Syntax.** With exercises. Interleaved. Flexible cloth. 30 cts.
- Houghton's French by Reading.** Begins with interlinear, and gives in the course of the book the whole of elementary grammar, with reading matter, notes, and vocabulary. Half leather. \$1.12.
- Hotchkiss's Le Premier Livre de Français.** A purely conversational introduction to French, for young pupils. Boards. Illustrated. 79 pages. 35 cts.
- Fontaine's Livre de Lecture et de Conversation.** Entirely in French. Combines Reading, Conversation, and Grammar. Cloth. 90 cts.
- Fontaine's Lectures Courantes.** Can follow the above. Contains Reading, Conversation, and English Exercises based on the text. Cloth. \$1.00.
- Lyon and Larpent's Primary French Translation Book.** An easy beginning reader, with very full notes, vocabulary, and English exercises based on the latter part of the text. Cloth. 60 cts.
- Super's Preparatory French Reader.** Complete and graded selections of interesting French, with notes and vocabulary. Half leather. 70 cts.
- French Fairy Tales (Joynes).** With notes, vocabulary, and English exercises based on the text. Boards, 35 cts.
- Heath's French-English and English-French Dictionary.** Recommended at all the colleges as fully adequate for the ordinary wants of students. Cloth. Retail price, \$1.50.

---

*Complete Catalogue of Modern Language texts sent on request.*

---

**D. C. HEATH & CO., PUBLISHERS.**

# Beath's Modern Language Series.

*Introduction prices are quoted unless otherwise stated.*

## EASY FRENCH TEXTS.

- Jules Verne's L'Expédition de la Jeune-Hardie.** With notes, vocabulary, and appendixes by W. S. Lyon. Boards. 95 pages. 25 cts.
- Gervais's Un Cas de Conscience.** With notes, vocabulary, and appendixes by R. P. Horaley. Paper. 86 pages. 25 cts.
- Génin's Le Petit Tailleur Bouton.** With notes, vocabulary, and appendixes by W. S. Lyon. Paper. 88 pages. 25 cts.
- Assollant's Une Aventure du Célèbre Pierrot.** With notes, vocabulary, and appendixes by R. E. Pain. Paper. 93 pages. 25 cts.
- Muller's Les Grandes Découvertes Modernes.** Talks on Photography and Telegraphy. With notes, vocabulary, and appendixes by F. E. B. Wala. Paper. 88 pages. 25 cts.
- Récits de Guerre et de Révolution.** Selected and edited, with notes, vocabulary, and appendixes by B. Minssen. Paper. 91 pages. 25 cts.
- Bruno's Les Enfants Patriotes.** With notes, vocabulary, and appendixes by W. S. Lyon. Paper. 94 pages. 25 cts.
- De la Bedollière's La Mère Michel et son Chat.** With notes, vocabulary, and appendixes by W. S. Lyon. Boards. 96 pages. 25 cts.
- Legouvé and Labiche's La Cigale chez les Fourmis.** A comedy in one act with notes by W. H. Witherby. Boards. 56 pages. 20 cts.
- Labiche and Martin's Le Voyage de M. Perrichon.** A Comedy with introduction and notes by Professor B. W. Wells, of the University of the South. Boards. 108 pages. 25 cts.
- Dumas's L'Evasion du Duc de Beaufort.** With notes by D. B. Kitchen. Boards. 91 pages. 25 cts.
- Assollant's Récits de la Vieille France.** With notes by E. B. Wauton. Paper. 78 pages. 25 cts.
- Berthet's Le Pacte de Famine.** With notes by B. B. Dickinson. Boards. 94 pages. 25 cts.
- Erckmann-Chatrian's L'Histoire d'un Paysan.** With notes by W. S. Lyon. Paper. 94 pages. 25 cts.
- France's Abeille.** With notes by C. P. Lebon of the Boston English High School. Paper. 94 pages. 25 cts.
- De Musset's Pierre et Camille.** With notes by Professor Super of Dickinson College. Paper. 65 pages. 20 cts.
- Lamartine's Jeanne d'Arc.** With foot-notes by Professor Barrère of Royal Military Academy, Woolwich, England. Boards. 156 pages. 30 cts.
- Trois Contes Choisis par Daudet.** (*Le Siège de Berlin, La dernière Classe, La Mule du Pape.*) With notes by Professor Sanderson of Harvard. Paper. 15 cts.
- Jules Verne's Le Tour du Monde en Quatre-vingts Jours.** Abbreviated and annotated by Professor Edgren, University of Nebraska. Boards. 181 pages. 35 cts.
- Halévy's L'Abbé Constantin.** Edited with notes, by Professor Thomas Logic, of Rutgers College. Boards. 160 pages. 35 cts.
- Erckmann-Chatrian's Le Conscrit de 1813.** With notes and vocabulary by Professor O. B. Super, Dickinson College. Cloth. 216 pages. 65 cts. Boards, 45 cts.
- Selections for Sight Translation.** Fifty fifteen-line French extracts compiled by Miss Bruce of the High School, Newton, Mass. Paper. 38 pages. 15 cts.
- Scribe's Bataille de Dames.** Comedy. Edited by Professor B. W. Wells of the University of the South. Boards. 116 pages. 25 cts.

# Beath's Modern Language Series.

*Introduction prices are quoted unless otherwise stated.*

## INTERMEDIATE FRENCH TEXTS.

- Pailleron's Le Monde où l'on s'ennuie.** A comedy with notes by Professor Pendleton of Bethany College, W. Va. Boards. 138 pages. 30 cts.
- Sonvestre's Le Mari de Mme de Solange.** With notes by Professor Super of Dickinson College. Paper. 59 pages. 20 cts.
- Historiettes Modernes, Vol. I.** Short modern stories, selected and edited, with notes by C. Fontaine, Director of French in the High Schools of Washington, D. C. Cloth. 162 pages. 60 cts.
- Historiettes Modernes, Vol. II.** Short stories as above. Cloth. 160 pages. 60 cts.
- Fleurs de France.** A collection of short and choice French stories of recent date, with notes by C. Fontaine, Washington, D. C. Cloth, 158 pages. 60 cts.
- Sandeau's Mlle de la Seiglière.** With introduction and notes by Professor Warren of Adelbert College. Paper. 158 pages. 30 cts.
- Souvestre's Un Philosophe sous les Toits.** With notes and vocabulary by Professor Frazer of the University of Toronto. Cloth. 283 pages. 80 cts.  
— Without vocabulary. Cloth. 178 pages. 50 cts.
- Souvestre's Les Confessions d'un Ouvrier.** With notes by Professor Super of Dickinson College. Paper. 127 pages. 30 cts.
- Augier's Le Gendre de M. Poirier.** One of the masterpieces of modern Comedy. Edited by Professor B. W. Wells, of the University of the South. Boards. 118 pages, 30 cts.
- Mérimée's Colomba.** With notes by Professor J. A. Fontaine of Bryn Mawr College. 192 pages. Cloth, 60 cts.; boards, 35 cts.
- Mérimée's Chronique du Règne de Charles IX.** With notes by Professor P. Desages, Cheltenham College, England. Paper. 119 pages. 25 cts.
- Sand's La Mare au Diable.** With notes by Professor F. C. de Sumichrast of Harvard. Boards. 122 pages. 25 cts.
- Sand's La Petite Fadette.** With notes by F. Aston-Binns, Balliol College, Oxford. England. Boards. 142 pages. 30 cts.
- De Vigny's Le Cachet Rouge.** With notes by Professor Fortier of Tulane University. Paper. 60 pages. 20 cents.
- De Vigny's La Canne de Jonc.** Edited by Professor V. J. T. Spiers, with Introduction by Professor Cohn of Harvard. Boards. 218 pages. 40 cts.
- Victor Hugo's La Chute.** From *Les Misérables*. Edited with notes by Professor Huss of Princeton. Boards. 97 pages. 25 cts.
- Eckmann-Chatrian's Waterloo.** Abridged and annotated by Professor O. B. Super of Dickinson College. Boards. 189 pages. 35 cts.
- Champfleury's Le Violon de Faïence.** With notes by Professor Clovis Bévenot Mason College, England. Paper. 115 pages. 25 cts.
- Gautier's Voyage en Espagne.** With notes by H. C. Steel. Paper. 112 pages. 25 cts.
- Balzac's Le Curé de Tours.** With notes by Professor C. R. Carter, Wellington College, England. Boards. 98 pages. 25 cts.
- Daudet's La Belle-Nivernaise.** With notes by Professor Boielle of Dulwich College, England. Boards. 104 pages. 25 cts.
- Theuriet's Bigarreau.** With notes by C. Fontaine, Washington, D. C. Boards. 68 pages. 25 cts.
- Chateaubriand's Atala.** Edited by Professor Kuhns of Wesleyan University, Middletown, Conn. Boards. 100 pages. 00 cts.

# Heath's Modern Language Series.

*Introduction prices are quoted unless otherwise stated.*

## SCANDINAVIAN.

**Groth's Danish Grammar.** Contains grammar enough for the ordinary purposes of students. Cloth, 170 pages. \$1.00.

## SPANISH.

**Edgren's Spanish Grammar.** Gives all the grammar needed for correct and intelligent reading. Cloth, 123 pages. 50 cts.

**Yarns's Practical Method in Spanish.** For those who wish to obtain a practical command of the language without entering into its grammatical structure. Cloth, 322 pages. Retail price, \$1.00.

**Cervantes' Don Quixote.** The first twelve books, with introduction, notes, and vocabulary by Professor Fickel at Columbia College. Cloth, 600 pages. *In preparation.*

**First Spanish Readings.** Modern Spanish stories with notes and vocabulary for beginners in Spanish by Professor Matheis of the Leland Stanford University. \$1.00.

## ITALIAN.

**Goodenow's Italian Grammar.** Gives all the grammar needed by the ordinary student of Italian. Cloth, 120 pages. 50 cts.

**Goodenow's Italian Composition.** Furnishes supplementary exercises to accompany the grammar, followed by a course in more advanced composition. Cloth, 112 pages. 50 cts.

**First Italian Readings.** Modern Italian stories with notes and vocabulary for beginners in Italian by Professor Reese of the Ohio State University. 50 cts.

**Shaw's del Fuoco's L'Arte e L'Arte della Comedia.** Edited with notes by J. H. Thurston at Cornell. Paper, 100 pages. 25 cts.

## PETROGRAPHICAL.

**Method of Teaching Modern Languages.** Treats of the value and use of methods in teaching the modern languages. A valuable book for any instructor. Cloth, 128 pages. 50 cts. 1000 10 00

—————  
PUBLISHED BY HEATH'S MODERN LANGUAGE SERIES  
—————

**D. C. HEATH & CO., PUBLISHERS.**

BOSTON NEW YORK CHICAGO LONDON

2:55

2:55

2:55

2:55

2:55

2:55

2:55

2:55

2:55

2:55

2:55

2:55

2:55

2:55

2:55

2:55

2:55

# Heath's Modern Language Series.

*Introduction prices are quoted unless otherwise stated.*

## SCANDINAVIAN.

**Groth's Danish Grammar.** Contains grammar enough for the ordinary purposes of students. Cloth. 160 pages. \$1.00.

## SPANISH.

**Edgren's Spanish Grammar.** Gives all the grammar needed for correct and intelligent reading. Cloth. 123 pages. 80 cts.

**Ybarra's Practical Method in Spanish.** For those who wish to obtain a practical command of the language without entering into its grammatical structure. Cloth. 319 pages. Retail price, \$1.00.

**Cervantes' Don Quixote.** The first twelve books, with introduction, notes, and vocabulary by Professor Todd of Columbia College. Cloth. 000 pages. *In preparation.*

**First Spanish Readings.** Modern Spanish stories with notes and vocabulary for beginners in Spanish, by Professor Matzke of the Leland Stanford University. \$1.00.

## ITALIAN.

**Grandgent's Italian Grammar.** Gives all the grammar needed by the ordinary student of Italian. Cloth. 132 pages. 80 cts.

**Grandgent's Italian Composition.** Furnishes supplementary exercises to accompany the grammar, followed by a course in more advanced composition. Cloth. 103 pages. 60 cts.

**First Italian Readings.** Modern Italian stories with notes and vocabulary for beginners in Italian, by Professor Bowen of the Ohio State University. 90 cts.

**Gherardi's del Testa's L'Oro e L'Orpello.** Comedy. Edited with notes by C. H. Thurber of Cornell. Paper. 72 pages. 25 cts.

## PEDAGOGICAL.

**Methods of Teaching Modern Languages.** Papers on the value and on methods of teaching the modern languages. A valuable book for any instructor. Cloth. 223 pages. Retail price, 90 cts.

---

*Complete catalogue of Modern Language texts sent on request.*

---

**D. C. HEATH & CO., PUBLISHERS,**

**BOSTON. NEW YORK. CHICAGO. LONDON.**

ses d

intell-

a prac-  
Cloth

vocabu-  
w.

ilary for  
\$1.00

ordinary

, accom-  
oth. w

or begi

notes w

a method  
loth. w



